Battle and Beating, Water and Waste

Micro-Level Impact Evaluation in Developing and

Emerging Economies

Dissertation

zur Erlangung des wirtschaftswissenschaftlichen Doktorgrades

der Wirtschaftswissenschaftlichen Fakultät der Georg-August-Universität Göttingen

vorgelegt von

Dipl. Oec. Johannes Peter Rieckmann, M.A.

aus Göttingen

Göttingen, 2014

Acknowledgements

Table of contents

List of tables

List of figures

List of abbreviations

Abbreviation	Description
2SLS	2-stage Least Squares estimation procedure
2SPrB	Two-stage Probit Bootstrap estimation procedure
ATE	Average Treatment Effect
ATT	Average Treatment effect for the Treated
AUC	*Autodefensas Unidas de Colombia*, United Self-Defence Forces of Colombia
BMZ	*Bundesministerium für Wirtschaftliche Zusammenarbeit*, German Federal Ministry of Economic Cooperation and Development
CGIAR-CSI	Consultative Group on International Agricultural Research – Consortium for Spatial Information
CIAT	*Centro Internacional de Agricultura Tropical*, International Centre for Tropical Agriculture
confrt.	Confrontations
CRC-PEG	Courant Research Centre "Poverty, Equity and Growth in Developing Countries"
CSO	Yemenite Central Statistical Organization
DALY	Disability-Adjusted Life Years
DANE	*Departamento Administrativo Nacional de Estadística*, Colombian national statistics department
DAS	*Departamento Administrativo de Seguridad*, Colombian Administrative Security Department
DD	Double Differencing
DFG	*Deutsche Forschungsgemeinschaft*, German Research Foundation
DHS	Demographic and Health Survey
DIVIPOLA	*DIVIsión POLítico Administrative*, political administrative division
DIW	*Deutsches Institut für Wirtschaftsforschung*, German Institute for Economic Research
Dr.	*Doktor*, doctor
Durat°	Duration
e.coli	*Escherichia coli*, a bacterium
Edu.	Education
e.g.	*Exempli gratia*, for the sake of example
EBV	Endogenous Binary Variable
ESRI	Company and supplier GIS software, and geospatial vector data format
et al.	*Et alii*, and others
etc.	*Et cetera*, and so forth
et seqq.	*Et sequentia*, and those following
FAO	Food and Agriculture Organization of the United Nations
FARC	*Fuerzas Armadas Revolucionarias de Colombia*, Revolutionary Armed Forces of Colombia
FRA	Forest Resources Assessment
GIS	Geographic Information System
GPS	Global Positioning System
HH	Household
i.e.	*Id est*, that is
ibid.	*Ibidem*, the same place

ICT	Information and Communication Technology
IGAC	*Instituto Geográfico Agustín Codazzi*, Geographic institute Agustin Codazzi
IV	Instrumental Variable
IVP	Instrumental Variable Probit estimation procedure
JEL	Journal of Economic Literature
KfW	*Kreditanstalt für Wiederaufbau*, German Development Bank
LATE	Local Average Treatment Effect, see ATT
LDV	Limited Dependent Variable
MENA	Middle East and North African region
MNSSD	Middle East and North Africa Sustainable Development Sector Department
N	Sample Size
No./ #	Number
ODC	*Observatorio de Drogas de Colombia*, Colombian Drug Observatory
OLS	Ordinary Least Squares
p.	Page
Part.	Partner's
Ph.D.	*Philosophiae doctor*, Doctor of Philosophy
pp.	Pages
Prof.	*Professor*, professor
PSM	Propensity Score Matching
PTOP	Provincial Towns Program
PTSD	Posttraumatic Stress Disorder
R^2	Coefficient of determination
RCT	Randomized Controlled Trial
Resp.	Respondent's
RSUR BP	Recursive Seemingly Unrelated Biprobit estimation procedure
SD	Standard Deviation
SIG-OT	*Sistema de Información Geográfica para la planeación y el Ordenamiento Territorial*, Geographic Information System for Planning and Territorial Regulation
SRTM	Shuttle Radar Topography Mission
SUR BP	Seemingly Unrelated Biprobit estimation procedure
USD	United States Dollars
W2SLS	Wooldridge 2-stage Least Squares estimation procedure
YER	Yemenite Rial, currency
Yrs	Years

Introduction

"If the numbers we see in domestic violence were applied to terrorism or gang violence, the entire country would be up in arms, and it would be the lead story on the news every night."

Congressman Mark Andrew Green[1]

"The General Assembly [...] 1. Recognizes the right to safe and clean drinking water and sanitation as a human right that is essential for the full enjoyment of life and all human rights; [...]."

General Assembly of the United Nations[2]

Empirical analysis in the domain of development economics has been coined by the macroeconomic perspective for decades. It is a comparatively recent evolvement that a string of literature focusing on micro-level data branches off – or, much more to the point, supplements and widens – this well-established field of analytical and explorative studies. Furthermore, both policy-makers and scholars display an intensified interest in uncovering and quantifying the effects which particular environmental conditions and human behaviour on the household and individual level have on individual wellbeing. The work at hand aims at contributing to the knowledge base which this extension of the academic discipline is generating. To this end, the findings of econometric impact evaluations – which constitute the common thread running through this dissertation – conducted in two different areas of day-to-day life in developing and emerging economies are presented.

The first of these areas is the behavioural response of people living in spatial vicinity of violent conflict. Violence makes life miserable. Since now more than two decades the world has been becoming a less predictable and more insecure environment for large shares of the world population. Relatively stable geopolitical powers opposing each other and controlling large spheres of interest have been successively replaced by more fluid, opaque and less spacious theatres of conflict. The pending threat of interstate war between geographically separated parties pursuing power-political interests and – at least allegedly – ideological goals has been replaced by actual and multiple eruption of civil and so-called low-intensity conflict; and asymmetric warfare. It appears that bloodshed has not become less prevalent than before. Struggles today are often rooted in

---

[1] Former member of the United States House of Representatives Mark Andrew Green, Wisconsin, quoted in Colorado Department of Human Services (2010).
[2] Quoted from Resolution 64/292 (United Nations General Assembly, 2010), passed 28 July 2010, 108th plenary meeting.

unmanaged ethnic friction, diverging religious convictions, and competition for natural resources. The dividing line between combatants and civil population has eroded and become more permeable than before, which is closely linked with larger shares of the civil population being victimised by – or witnessing extreme forms of – physical force. Exposure of its members to violence backfires on society. It severely affects individual wellbeing and development potentialities, and often instils further violent behaviour. Getting granular on the impact of such exposure on the prevalence of domestic violence, the first chapter of this dissertation thesis provides scientific tesserae contributing to estimating a societal price-tag of warlike row; and its repercussions on interpersonal relationships and social behaviour towards family and friends. In the long run, inter-generational consequences of domestic violence as for example stunting of personality development of children hamper macroeconomic development.

The second area of interest is revolving around the most important resource on earth. Without water, there is no life. With polluted drinking water, life is miserable. Quality of life is reduced by illness; and for still far too many of the weakest members of society – the children – even its duration. In developing countries diarrhoeal diseases account for the majority of child mortality, with almost nine out of ten cases of death by diarrhoea caused by bad water and sanitation conditions (Black, Morris and Bryce 2003). According to the United Nations Target 7.C of the Millennium Development Goals ("Halve, by 2015, the proportion of the population without sustainable access to safe drinking water and basic sanitation", see United Nations, 2013) was met five years early, regarding drinking water. Still, lack of access remains an issue in urban agglomerations of Central Asia and the Caucasus, as well as in numerous rural regions all over the developing world. The current situation is less auspicious regarding sanitation. More than half of the world population does not yet benefit from regular access. The second chapter studies the impacts of connection of households to piped water and improved sewerage on health, school and workplace attendance.

It can be frequently observed that piped water, after having been purified at treatment plants and supplied germfree, gets re-contaminated within households. Conducting water quality testing at different points of the intra-household supply chain allows answering *where* and often also *how* the pollution takes place. The lion's share of this deterioration of water quality is linked to behavioural aspects of water handling and hygiene rather than to constructional features. The obvious follow-up question reads: *why* does the recontamination takes place, *i.e.* which conditions are the drivers behind those behavioural aspects? The third chapter builds upon the second; and addresses this question. Here the determinants of intra-household behaviour regarding water handling and hygiene are scrutinized, and linked with Chapter II.

Synopsis of Chapter I, on the effect of civil conflict on domestic violence in Colombia

Experience and direct witnessing of severe violence leave its marks on a person's mind set and personality. The same is true – albeit to a lesser extent – for frequent and prolonged indirect exposure by, *e.g.*, news reports about violent incidents in spatial proximity of the person's social circle. The psychological cost of living in a war zone has to be borne by the persons themselves as well as their next of kin. Attitudes tend to shift towards higher levels of acceptance of violence as a means of social interaction and settling dispute.

The term attitude is a somewhat elusive concept; and its individual characteristics are hard to observe. What can be observed, though, are behavioural aspects attitude manifests itself in. Often, interpersonal behaviour of people who mentally suffer from what they felt saw and heard of shifts towards more violent patterns itself. The constant tension created by an insecure environment and deprivation of areas of retreat in conjunction with emotional blunting increases, for example, the probability of incidence of domestic violence. The change of incidence of domestic violence is therefore exploited in this chapter as an indicator of change of attitude.

This chapter is joint work, written together with Dominik Noe. It contributes to the string of literature assessing the medium and long term consequences of civil conflict on society. We postulate the theory that living in households in proximity to locations where incidents of extreme violence occur increases the probability of women living in these households to become victims of domestic violence. This theory is then tested using data from Colombia as a country where both rich data on incidence of violent clashes as well as of domestic violence is available.

The core finding is that higher intensity of conflict increases the probability of women to be subject to domestic violence.

Synopsis of Chapter II, on the health impact of extending access to piped water and sanitation in urban Yemen

Supply of safe drinking water and hygienic wastewater disposal are considered to be basic prerequisites for human health and development, especially in urban agglomerations. While sustainable provision with this fundamental infrastructure alone poses challenges in towns around the developing world, water scarcity often exacerbates the endeavour further. The combination of high population growth and groundwater overuse is a phenomenon that can be observed in various countries of the Middle East and North Africa.

Over the recent decades, both governments of recipient countries as well as international donors have developed a pronounced interest in evaluating and measuring the impact of construction of piped water and improved sewerage networks on health, education, income, labour time and aspects of livelihood. The goal is to increase effectiveness and efficiency of resource allocation, to improve sustainability, and to learn about disruptive factors which often appear to dilute the intended benefits.

This chapter is joint work, written together with Stephan Klasen, Tobias Lechtenfeld, and Kristina Meier. It contributes to the presently still manageable array of impact evaluations in the water and sanitation sector, and to the authors' knowledge is the first rigorous one in the urban environment. The connection of households in provincial towns to piped water and improved sewerage in two different topographic regions of Yemen is investigated with respect to its impacts on health, as well as resultant school and workplace attendance of the household members. Quasi-experimental methods and water quality tests in presence of variation of infrastructure proliferation allow identifying these impacts separately for mere connection to piped water, and for additional connection to improved sewerage.

The core finding is that connection to piped water in the Yemenite towns can do harm when water supply is intermittent, and does not change much in presence of reliable one compared to traditional and alternative solutions of water supply. Anyhow, connection to improved sewerage comes with health benefits when water supply is reliable.

Synopsis of Chapter III, on determinants of drinking water treatment and hygiene habits in urban Yemen

One of the goals that infrastructure construction projects in the water and sanitation sector aim to achieve is improvement of health of beneficiary population. The frequently observed dilution of intended health benefits of this utility infrastructure is only partly rooted in technical aspects of the supply side, such as intrusion of wastewater into drinking water feed pipes. Just as little can the remainder of the dilution be attributed entirely to environmental aspects, such as unanticipated rapid population growth and depleting ground water tables. Evidence suggests that behavioural aspects on the demand side – *i.e.*, within the connected households – have to be blamed for considerable complicity.

This is also the case for a respectable share of the Yemenite households the reader already will have become acquainted with in Chapter II. Drinking water quality is observed to deteriorate in those households from the point of feeding – usually a supply pipe leading from street level to a roof or courtyard storage tank – to the point of use. Technical considerations as well as particularities of microbiological contamination strongly hint towards pollution occurring due to water handling and hygiene practises in need of improvement.

Chapter III builds upon the findings of the preceding Chapter II, doing some "detective" work in search of what is behind the lack of desirable health impacts. It contributes to the literature identifying drivers of human behaviour regarding water handling and general hygiene. In order to shed light on the conducive and impedimental factors having a hand in the matter, self-reported behaviour is related to overarching characteristics of households; and individual characteristics of household heads. Those factors which can be influenced in the short to medium term are of special interest, as they are most relevant for policy implication.

The core finding is that hygiene training, access to information and communication technology, and school education are among the relevant controllable determinants of water handling and hygiene behaviour. Policy implications are to invest in these three domains. Connection to piped water and improved sewerage – which typically can be widened out only in the medium to long term – is fostering desirable behaviour as well, albeit to a lesser extent, and with the effect of the former exceeding that of the latter.

I provide three suggestions answering the arising question how – regarding the seemingly contractionary effect of connection to piped water and improved sewerage – the findings of Chapter II and III can be reconciled. First, we might witness either an overcompensation of the beneficial impact of water treatment and hygiene habits on health by the detrimental impact of infrastructure

connection. Second, water treatment (and less likely from my point of view, hygiene practices) at the household level might – although implemented – be ineffective for some reason, possibly faulty practices. Third, we might witness an adjustment reaction of learning households that increase their efforts regarding water safety and hygiene in answer to the variation of piped water quality they observe.

Chapter I: Violent behaviour – the effect of civil conflict on domestic violence in Colombia

Joint work with Dominik Noe[3]

Abstract

In this chapter we analyse the impact of civil conflict on domestic violence in Colombia and find that higher conflict intensity increases the likelihood of women to become a victim of domestic violence. The idea behind our approach is that the experience of conflict changes behaviour, attitude and culture. We consider domestic violence to be an observable outcome of this change in behaviour. Taking advantage of the uneven spatial distribution of the conflict we assess its impact, using micro data from Colombia.

Keywords: Domestic Violence, Conflict, Colombia, Crime, Spatial Identification

JEL classification: H56, J12

---

[3] Courant Research Centre "Poverty, Equity and Growth", Georg-August-University Göttingen, Wilhelm-Weber-Str. 2, 37073 Göttingen, Germany, email: dnoe@uni-goettingen.de

I.1   Introduction

It is often claimed that violence begets violence. This can mean that the one being stricken strikes back. It can however also mean that witnesses of violent acts are influenced in their own behaviour and therefore might exercise violence themselves.

The idea of this chapter is that the experience of fighting and bloodshed caused by a civil conflict will change the behaviour and attitude of the population witnessing it, so that they will be more willing to also use violence. If this was the case, conflict could create a self-reinforcing culture of violence which would hinder its termination, slow down the recovery afterwards or increase the likelihood of new fighting. Culture and attitude are hard to observe and therefore we use differences in observable behaviour to check this hypothesis. Many forms of observable violence could be a direct consequence of the conflict and not necessarily an expression of a behavioural change in the general public. Domestic violence is an observable form of violent behaviour that is not likely to be a direct consequence of a military conflict, but there are plausible mechanisms how the behavioural change caused by such a conflict could lead to the use of violence within the family. The main channels through which we expect conflict to increase domestic violence are increased acceptance of violence if exposure of people to different forms of violence is augmented; and the function of domestic violence as a stress release in an insecure environment.

This research aims at improving the understanding of the consequences of conflict. Blattman and Miguel (2010) state that there is a lack of theory and evidence "in assessing the impact of civil war on the fundamental drivers of long-run economic performance – institutions, technology and culture – even though these may govern whether a society recovers, stagnates or plunges back into war".[4] While domestic violence is a crime and its investigation and prevention in itself an important issue, we also use it as an indication of behavioural change. It is a threat for the security and cohesion of society as it increases the violent potential for the future. This does not only refer to those people whose behaviour has been changed by the conflict but also to later generations who suffer from this domestic violence and are thereby negatively affected from childhood on.

In order to analyse the impact of civil conflict on behaviour, attitude and culture we use micro-data from Colombia, considering domestic violence to be an observable outcome of changes in behaviour. We find that a higher incidence of combat within a district significantly increases the likelihood of women in this district to become a victim of domestic violence.

---

[4] A prominent example for literature on the impact of violence on cultural norms is a paper written by Miguel, Saiegh and Satyanath (2011). The authors find a strong link between a professional football player's violent conduct – measured by red and yellow cards attributed – with the civil conflict history in his country of origin.

Colombia was chosen for various reasons. Domestic violence is a very common phenomenon in the country. In our sample up to 20 per cent of the interviewed women who are currently in a partnership report physical abuse by their partners.[5] This is very high compared to other countries.[6] In our data only women were interviewed and therefore we cannot consider domestic violence from women against men.

Today's conflict in Colombia has its roots in the 1950's and still continues. It involves different guerrilla organizations, of which the most important today, are the *Fuerzas Armadas Revolucionarias de Colombia* (FARC) and *Ejército de Liberación Nacional* (ELN). Originating as peasant organizations especially the FARC became a highly organized and effective guerrilla army with thousands of soldiers. As a defence against the guerrilla, private actors – mainly land owners – founded paramilitary organizations which later on joined to become the *Autodefensas Unidas de Colombia* (AUC). All non-state actors rely heavily on illegal means of financing. The most important sources are drug production and trafficking, kidnapping and extortion. Although the illegal economy was not the source of the conflict, it is probably a main cause for its duration and its intensification especially in the 1990s.[7]

Despite the long duration of the conflict the state is still functioning, although not in complete control over all of its territory. Because of the existence of such a functional state, high quality data about the conflict is available. Very few countries display both the incidence and severity of conflict on the one hand as well as the "rich micro-level data" (Steele, 2007) on the other hand, as is the case in Colombia.

---

[5] The recall period comprises the past twelve months. 12.4% of the women report to have been subject to violence by a person other than their partner before that period (see also Table A.1). Note that the lifetime prevalence cannot be found straightforwardly by summing up the two measures, as there will probably be an intersecting set. Also the non-captured prevalence of physical violence inflicted by the current partner longer than twelve months ago could be confounding, although in the other direction (thus underestimating lifetime prevalence).

[6] The World Health Organization (García-Moreno *et al.*, 2005) reports in its Table 4.1 exposure to at least one act of physical act of violence within the past twelve months ranging from 3.1% (urban Japan) to 29% (provincial Ethiopia); with a non-weighted mean of 14.8% (own calculation). Ten countries from Africa, Asia, Europe, Oceania and South America are part of the considered sample. Reported lifetime prevalence of domestic violence ranges between 13% (urban Japan) and 61% (provincial Peru). In Africa on average the situation seems to be particularly dire. Durevall and Lindskog (2013) report in their Table 2 prevalence rates of physical intimate partner violence in eight sub-Saharan countries. DHS data stem from 2005 to 2011, with a recall period of twelve months. Violence rates range between 10.7% (Burkina Faso) and 56% (Rwanda), with a non-weighted mean of 31% (own calculation).

[7] For a short summary of the rather complicated conflict history and involved parties in Colombia since the mid-20th century, see, *e.g.*, Steele (2007) and Garcés (2005). Sanín (2008) provides useful insight on the characteristics of the non-state "armies" entangled in these conflicts.

Our analysis is based on individual-level data from the year 2005. In order to identify the effects of conflict we use the uneven spatial distribution of conflict intensity within the Colombian territory. We find that a woman in a district with high conflict intensity has an up to ten percentage points higher chance of being a victim of domestic violence than a woman in a district with average or lower conflict intensity.

I.2   Theory and literature review

This chapter is based upon the idea that experiencing or witnessing violent manifestations of conflict will increase the incidence of domestic violence in spatial proximity of these manifestations. This means we expect a behavioural change of people due to conflict. The observation of behavioural change is, in most cases, very difficult; and therefore there is not much empirical research in this field. Two of the few exceptions are Voors *et al.* (2012) who find that people who experience violence from conflict become more risk-seeking and have a higher discount rate; and Blattman (2009) who finds victims of violence to show higher political activity.

We assume that the repeated and sustained witnessing of violent acts in the context of armed combat affects the mind-set. It can lead to "widespread tacit tolerance and acceptance of the use of physical violence to solve private and social problems" and ultimately to an omnipresent *culture of violence* (see Fishman and Miguel, 2008, on decisions as a matter of culture; and Waldmann, 2007, specifically on the case of Colombia). Acclimatization and role models influence the way conflicts are resolved. This applies also within the framework of small social groups like the family, and all the way down to intimate relationships (see, *e.g.*, Adelman, 2003, on the effect of militarization). An environment of violent crime in the community is "associated with elevated risks of both physical and sexual violence in the family" (Koenig *et al.* 2006). Also, "community-level norms concerning wife beating" (*ibid.*) have a significant effect on occurrence rates, as well as on the consequences the affected wives draw from the experience in terms of, *e.g.*, divorce rates (Pollak, 2004). Wood (2008) argues that "social processes may be reshaped by conflict processes". Another factor might be the "emotional blunting" of victims, witnesses or perpetrators as a consequence of their experiences. This can lower the psychological threshold restraining the use of force at home. Post-traumatic stress disorders can result from exposure to violence, and lead to changes of behaviour. It was found in the United States that veterans with posttraumatic stress disorder (PTSD) are more often perpetrators of domestic violence than the general population (Sherman *et al.* 2006). We expect a similar effect to apply for witnesses of violence who were not directly involved in combat. We believe number and intensity of violent outbreaks to increase due to this effect.

Domestic violence is usually divided into two categories, one of which is referred to as expressive, the other one as instrumental. In the expressive form perpetrators gain utility from inflicting physical harm on their partners or children by being able to express their feelings in a drastic way, and release their emotional pressure (Winkel, 2007). Living in a conflict zone brings about a general and unassigned feeling of threat, loss of control, helplessness and an elevated level of emotional stress because the usual societal rules that bring a certain protection from physical and other harm do not necessarily apply anymore when the actions of present armed combatants are incalculable. Passing this pressure on onto others within the closest social environment in a "cyclist manner" – ducking and kicking – may serve as a psychological relief valve for these people. When persons feel the aforementioned loss of control they might use violence to prove having predominance at least over their direct social environment, *i.e.*, at least over some part of their life.

Long *et al.* (1991) describe not only this expressive aspect of utility creation for the perpetrator, but also include an instrumental function of spouse-beating. Domestic violence in its instrumental function is shaped and intended to modify the victim's behaviour. It aims to "educate" the victim in line with the interests of the perpetrator. The aforementioned emotional blunting will decrease empathy for others and thereby the threshold to resort to violent coercion instead of verbal dispute.

A very important point about domestic violence is its acceptance or non-acceptance by the victims. This is largely determined by cultural norms[8] and the victim's alternatives or exit options. If a victim is economically dependent on the perpetrator it is very difficult to leave an abusive relationship; while, *e.g.*, a good education and an independent economic situation could facilitate the exit. Hidrobo and Fernald (2013)[9] point out that the effect of economic independence may be ambiguous, and "where outside-of-marriage options are not a credible threat point and a power imbalance exists among the couple" – the latter being triggered by unequal education levels of the partners – "violence is likely to occur". The authors report this to be "consistent with psychological theories of power, control, and status inconsistency". Also, additional income earned by the women could provoke contestation over the money. Cultural and personal norms determine whether the victim will even recognize domestic violence as an injustice and try to end the relationship; or just accept it as something normal. Whether it is accepted or legally possible to end an abusive marriage also depends on the societal background.

---

[8] For instance, Kedir and Admasachew (2010) emphasize that victimised Ethiopian women tend not to resort to "institutional support" due to "general societal disapproval of such measures".
[9] Hidrobo and Fernald (2013) study the effect of an Ecuadorean cash transfer program.

Both sexes are represented among perpetrators and victims of domestic violence (see, for example, Strauss, 1993, and Karnofsky, 2005). The majority of perpetrators are male domestic partners, while most victims are female (*e.g.*, Aizer, 2010). This also is the setting that we have to focus on in our analysis due to data limitations. In an unsafe external environment both woman and men feel an increased need for protection. We believe that one important source of protection is the closest social environment, which is the family. If physical violence is commonplace in the geographical vicinity of their homes, we suppose that people show an increased reluctance to leave this protection. Compared to a situation without violent conflict, we therefore assume women to accept and endure more domestic violence than they would in a peaceful external environment. Probably this is even more the case for mothers who have to look after children. The fear of losing access to their children could hinder the former to turn their back on the children's father. Fear for the children's physical well-being also makes it difficult for mothers to leave them with their partner if he is a potential threat to the children. In the presence of violent exterior threats it becomes more crucial for the family to persist in order to serve as a protective environment. This function gains in importance as in the "climate of uncertainty, distrust, and polarization" which comes along with violent conflict, "traditional social networks of mutual aid might likewise weaken" (Wood, 2008). The traditional role of the man as provider is widely accepted in Colombia. It can come along with a higher threshold of accepted domestic violence compared to other societies, as women may feel dependent (Karnofsky, 2005; see also Farmer and Tiefenthaler, 1997, on a resource-centred non-cooperative model of domestic violence).

The spatial proximity of violent incidents to households is of relevance because closer events are perceived to be much more threatening than distant ones. Events one learns about by word of mouth or by direct witnessing are more terrifying than those which are taken notice of only from the newspapers or television broadcasting. Studies have shown that an incident of extreme violence can have distinct adverse psychological effects on people even if it happened thousands of kilometres away from them. For example, the terror attack against the World Trade Center in Manhattan on September 11th in 2001 has had a traumatizing effect on people all over the United States of America (Silver *et al.* 2002). It seems more than comprehensible that combat taking place only a few kilometres away from their homes will feel even more threatening for the Colombian population.

If experiencing or witnessing brutal physical violence - as present in a conflict – causes a behavioural change towards more violent patterns, the consequences which society has to cope with are diverse and serious. We believe that the potential for future violence is increased. High crime rates can be observed in societies afflicted by violent conflict (for the case of Colombia see, for example, Farmer and Tiefenthaler, 1997; and Richani, 1997). We think that the sparking of new conflicts becomes

more likely and the reconciliation of ongoing ones more difficult. We also expect post-conflict recovery of societies to get hampered. The consequences of the specific behaviour known under the term domestic violence are not only dire for the directly affected victim.[10] Detrimental effects arise for society as a whole from at least two elements. If domestic violence is a widespread phenomenon in a society we believe it to cultivate future conflict due to the lack of peaceful conflict resolution role models. Children whose ability to build affectionate relationships is destroyed are prone to resort to physical violence to resort conflicts in their adult life (Karnofsky, 2005). Furthermore, children who become victimized – or witness family members becoming victimized – often get stunted in their development of a free and confident personality. Fonagy (1999) proposes an attachment theory perspective on violence by men against women, with intimate partner violence being regarded as an "exaggerated response of a disorganized attachment system" in consequence of absence of a male parental role model and a history of abuse. Pollak (2004) introduces an intergenerational model of domestic violence in order to capture the influence of violent parents onto their children's future behaviour and the resulting vicious cycle, or "cycle of violence". In the long run we presume the detrimental effects for children to lead to negative macroeconomic consequences (Calderón, Gáfaro and Ibáñez, 2011, on inter-generational consequences of violence).

Research results about the effect of conflict on domestic violence can also be found in Gallegos and Gutierrez (2011) who investigate the case of Peru. While the subject is the same their empirical approach is somewhat different. We use contemporaneous conflict and they relate conflict data aggregated over the years 1980-2000 to data on domestic violence in the years 2003-2008. Gallegos and Gutierrez find that exposure to conflict during late childhood and early teenage years raises the probability to suffer from domestic violence later in life. Because of the long time period between the conflict and the observed domestic violence the identification in space and time becomes more problematic; and it is impossible to determine whether or not the perpetrator of domestic violence has been exposed to conflict. The study however suggests that some of the effects we observe as a direct response to the conflict experience might persist in the long term as well. Note that another recent study by La Mattina (2013) finds in a Rwandan context no support for the "hypothesis that the genocide led to an increase in men's propensity to perpetrate domestic violence", but proposes a causal channel via a deteriorated marriage market which leads to increased incidence of domestic violence.

---

[10] Domestic violence not only violates the victim's physical integrity, but also impairs the psyche. Quelopana (2012) for instance determines elevated symptoms of postpartum depression of Chilean women as "anxiety/insecurity, emotional lability, and mental confusion".

We empirically test our theory, using Colombian data because of the long and ongoing conflict and data availability. In addition, Colombia as a whole could probably be justifiably called a violent society not only considering the conflict but also when it comes to crime and violence in everyday life. Waldmann (2007) conducts a qualitative meta-analysis of publications[11] in economics, political sciences and sociology to trace the "culture of violence" and structural conditions fostering it. He finds that violence in Colombia is deeply rooted in the society and culture of the country and also analyses its interaction with the conflict. The violence in Colombia extends into the family where domestic violence is very common, not only occurring as the abuse of partners but also as widespread abuse of children.

I.3   Data and empirical strategy

For our analysis we use individual level data about domestic violence and aggregate data about the conflict and combine both on the basis of spatial location.

The data on domestic violence comes from a Demographic and Health Survey (DHS) conducted between the end of the year 2004 and the beginning of 2005. In total, 41,344 women between the ages of 13 and 49 years living in 37,211 households were interviewed. Besides questions about socio-economic characteristics, health and reproductive behaviour, this survey contains a specific domestic violence module that asks detailed questions about the experience of domestic violence during the last twelve months and in the time before. In the survey between 17 and 20 per cent of the women living in a relationship reported physical abuse by their partner during the past twelve months. The households can be located on the district level and the interviews took place in 230 of the more than 1100 Colombian districts.[12] The spatial distribution of these districts is shown in Figure A.1 in Appendix A.4. Since we can identify both the location and time of the experience of domestic violence we are able to relate its occurrence to the conflict intensity in the region during the time before.

The data on conflict intensity comes from the Colombian *Programa Presidencial de Derechos Humanos y Derecho Internacional Humanitario* (Presidential Program for Human Rights and International Humanitarian Law). This project tracks the inner conflict in Colombia as well as directly connected and some other forms of violence like homicides, assassinations of syndicate members, journalists or politicians. The indicator we use to measure conflict intensity is the number of armed confrontations between government and irregular forces per district and year. This indicator is

---

[11] Waldmann reviews scientific publications from the English, French, German, and Spanish language areas.
[12] There were interviews in 231 districts but we exclude one district because there was only one woman interviewed who had a partner. The terms municipality and district are used interchangeably in the text.

available for all Colombian districts. It does not include other forms of violence like one-sided attacks and massacres and therefore mainly consists of confrontations between guerrilla and government forces (as paramilitaries usually try not to fight government troops). We do believe that the indicator is sufficient for our purpose, as we expect open armed confrontations mainly to happen where the conflict is most intense. A future extension of this work could be to also use the excluded types of violence mentioned above; either additionally or alternatively. Figure A.2 in Appendix A.4 shows the magnitude of the indicator for all districts of Colombia. As can be seen there the conflict is concentrated in some regions while others are not very much affected. This spatial variation enables us to identify the effect of conflict.

The empirical model is a Probit regression by which we determine the probability for each individual woman in the sample to have become a victim of domestic violence in the previous year.

The model takes the form:

$$\Pr(Y_{im} = 1 \,|\, C_m, X_{im}) = \Phi(\beta_0 + \beta_1 C_m + \beta X_{im}) \tag{I.1}$$

where Y_{im}, the dependent variable, is a dummy variable indicating whether or not woman i living in municipality/district m has experienced domestic violence during the last twelve months. C_m is our conflict intensity measure for municipality m. This is our main explanatory variable and it is defined as the number of armed confrontations in the district in the years 2003 and 2004 which are the two years prior to the interview.[13] Because of this we only include women who have been living for at least two years at the place where they were interviewed. X is a vector of other individual or household specific control variables we assume to influence the probability of having been the victim of domestic violence. The standard errors are clustered at the municipality level.[14]

Our identification in time has shortcomings since the conflict data is only available on a yearly basis. Therefore for the early interviews we might count confrontations that had not yet happened (our indicator is for the whole year of 2004 and some interviews started already in October) and for late interviews there might be confrontations we did not count (the interviews continued until the middle of 2005). There are also weaknesses in the spatial identification. Since we only count what happens

---

[13] Note that these years fall into the time period of "Plan Colombia", a multi-billion dollar program of military (and other) cooperation of the United States of America and Colombia. It was implemented between the years 2001 and 2005 and aimed at waging war against organized drug-related crime. Probably the conflict data therefore stem from a rather intense phase of the clashes. For a short introduction and some figures on "Plan Colombia" see Pineda (2011) and Mejia and Restrepo (2008).

[14] The actual data clusters reported in the data are located at a much lower level. Using those instead of the district level reduces the standard errors of our results (not reported).

in the district, the fighting in large districts could have taken place very far from the interviewed household, which would matter if the effect of violence decreases with distance. On the other hand we underestimate the conflict intensity people are exposed to in small districts, where confrontations happening in neighbouring municipalities are still very close but not counted (often they would be only a few kilometres away). We use different approaches to try to account for this. Our findings are however robust to all those different specifications (not all are reported in this chapter). There are also arguments for possible endogeneity issues like reverse causality and unobserved variable bias. Since we do not think that this is a major problem and the discussion is somewhat lengthy, it is not presented in the main results but separately in section I.4.4.

Since our interest is in domestic violence perpetrated by the spouse or partner, not all women interviewed are part of our analysis.[15] In our different specifications we use basically two samples. The first sample are all women that currently have a partner (married or not) and are living together with this partner. This classification is based on the information given by the women. This group allows us to use all our household specific control variables and comprises 17,319 women. The second group consists of the first group and additionally, all women who state that they are in a relationship, but do not live with their partner. In this case, we are slightly changing the analysis as some control variables are no longer applicable or require a change in their interpretation. The number of observed women in this case increases to 21,636.

The incidence of domestic violence is even higher among women who do not live with their partner (close to 33 per cent). Including this group in our analysis strongly increases the measured effect of the conflict variable and also increases its significance. Our expectation is that this group contains many women who have actually left their partners because of abuse. Although in this case we can capture less information with some of the control variables, we think that the results using the extended group of women tells us more about the real magnitude of the effect of conflict on violent behaviour.

As we want to see the effect of war on non-combatants only, we exclude all women whose partner is in the military. Regular fighters in the FARC hardly have any contact to their family (as described, *e.g.*, in Sanín, 2008). Therefore the only case where the partner of an interviewed woman can be an active combatant is if he is a member of a paramilitary group. Estimates for the relevant time period range

---

[15] Extending the analysis to include violence exercised by persons other than the partner is not possible, because the questions about domestic violence in the last twelve months only refer to the partners' behaviour. Therefore only women with a partner can be used for the analysis.

between seven to twelve thousand paramilitary fighters (*ibid.*), so the contamination of our dataset is probably small, since Colombia has a population size of about 40 million.

Our main dependent variable is constructed from questions about physical violence perpetrated by the partner during the twelve months before the interview. It contains the following categories: Being pushed or shaken; hit with the hand; hit with an object; bitten; kicked or dragged; attacked with a knife, gun or other weapon, being physically forced into an unwanted sex act and whether the partner tried to strangle or burn the woman. We also included it if the woman was threatened by her partner with a knife, gun or other weapon. Although this is not a physical attack we think that in its quality it comes close enough to be included. Our dependent variable is coded one if any one of the mentioned attacks happened and zero otherwise. We later also include other non-physical aspects.

Descriptive statistics of our variables are presented in Tables I.1 and I.2. Table I.1 presents the descriptives for the whole sample of women who are living together with their partners. In this table we do not include women who do not live with their partner as the household characteristics are not the characteristics of the household of the perpetrator. If they are included, the values are very similar, except that the percentage of victims of violence is increased by about three percentage points from 17.7 to 20.7 per cent.

In Table I.2 the statistics are presented separately for conflict intensive districts and others. Here we define districts as conflict-intensive if there had been more than two armed confrontations during the time considered. The percentage of women who reported physical abuse by their partners is about three percentage points higher in the conflict zones. Also, more women in conflict zones report to have experienced violence in the past (not by their current partner). Surprisingly most other indicators that turn out to increase the incidence of domestic violence in our analysis are looking more favourable in those regions which are more conflict-intensive. On average, people in these areas are wealthier and more educated than those in more quiet districts. Including women who do not live with their partners in these statistics (not reported) does not change these trends. So just looking at the descriptive statistics already gives a hint that conflict might increase violent domestic behaviour. More information about the variables is given in the next section.

Table I.1: Summary statistics: all women who live with their partner

Variable	Obs	Mean	SD	Min	Max
Physical domestic violence	17319	0.17668	0.38141	0	1
Serious Threats	17319	0.17917	0.38350	0	1
Physical violence + threats	17319	0.25550	0.43615	0	1
Poorest	17319	0.21497	0.41081	0	1
Poorer	17319	0.24493	0.43006	0	1
Middle	17319	0.21872	0.41339	0	1
Richer	17319	0.18148	0.38542	0	1
Richest	17319	0.13990	0.34690	0	1
Rural	17319	0.27704	0.44755	0	1
No. of children	17319	2.17807	1.55807	0	12
No. of female adults in HH	17319	1.37878	0.73702	0	8
Respondent's Age	17319	33.72019	8.74687	13	49
No Education	17319	0.04203	0.20067	0	1
Primary Education	17319	0.36336	0.48098	0	1
Secondary Education	17319	0.44951	0.49746	0	1
Higher Education	17319	0.14510	0.35221	0	1
Respondent currently working	17319	0.50332	0.50000	0	1
Earnings significant share in household spending	17319	0.78226	0.41272	0	1
At least six months pregnant	17319	0.02442	0.15437	0	1
Experienced violence in the past	17319	0.12351	0.32903	0	1
Partner's age	17319	38.48998	10.43356	16	98
Partner's Education: None	17319	0.05514	0.22826	0	1
Partner's Education: Primary	17319	0.38472	0.48654	0	1
Partner's Education: Secondary	17319	0.41221	0.49225	0	1
Partner's Education: Higher	17319	0.13846	0.34539	0	1
No. armed confrontations 03/04	17319	3.68607	6.04484	0	33

Table I.2: Summary statistics: districts separated by conflict intensity

	Low intensity conflict					High intensity conflict				
	Obs	Mean	SD	Min	Max	Obs	Mean	SD	Min	Max
Physical domestic violence	11576	0.191	0.393	0	1	10060	0.225	0.418	0	1
Serious Threats	11576	0.211	0.408	0	1	10060	0.231	0.422	0	1
Physical violence + threats	11576	0.283	0.451	0	1	10060	0.312	0.463	0	1
Poorest	11576	0.258	0.438	0	1	10060	0.134	0.341	0	1
Poorer	11576	0.266	0.442	0	1	10060	0.232	0.422	0	1
Middle	11576	0.207	0.405	0	1	10060	0.256	0.436	0	1
Richer	11576	0.159	0.366	0	1	10060	0.213	0.410	0	1
Richest	11576	0.110	0.313	0	1	10060	0.166	0.372	0	1
Rural	11576	0.349	0.477	0	1	10060	0.144	0.351	0	1
No. of children	11576	2.237	1.632	0	12	10060	2.130	1.532	0	11
No. of female adults in HH	11576	1.490	0.829	0	8	10060	1.471	0.804	0	6
Respondent's Age	11576	34.103	8.780	13	49	10060	33.988	8.775	13	49
No Education	11576	0.050	0.218	0	1	10060	0.033	0.178	0	1
Primary Education	11576	0.382	0.486	0	1	10060	0.322	0.467	0	1
Secondary Education	11576	0.437	0.496	0	1	10060	0.483	0.500	0	1
Higher Education	11576	0.131	0.338	0	1	10060	0.162	0.368	0	1
Respondent currently working	11576	0.526	0.499	0	1	10060	0.572	0.495	0	1
Earnings significant share in household spending	11576	0.804	0.397	0	1	10060	0.797	0.402	0	1
At least 6 months pregnant	11576	0.022	0.147	0	1	10060	0.022	0.146	0	1
Experienced violence in the past	11576	0.110	0.314	0	1	10060	0.137	0.344	0	1
Partner's age	9451	38.657	10.376	16	98	7868	38.290	10.499	16	98
Partner's Education: None	11576	0.065	0.246	0	1	10060	0.043	0.203	0	1
Partner's Education: Primary	11576	0.395	0.489	0	1	10060	0.332	0.471	0	1
Partner's Education: Secondary	11576	0.399	0.490	0	1	10060	0.448	0.497	0	1
Partner's Education: Higher	11576	0.122	0.328	0	1	10060	0.160	0.367	0	1
No. armed confrontations 03/04	11576	0.658	0.773	0	2	10060	7.364	7.527	3	33

High intensity: more than two armed confrontations in the considered time period

I.4   Analysis and results

This section presents the results of our main specifications and those of various robustness checks, consisting of changes in variables or the analysed samples. The basic, as well as the alternative specifications, are in line with our central theory that the experience of conflict changes behaviour towards more violent patterns, which can be observed by a higher incidence of domestic violence.

I.4.1   General models

Our basic models can be found in Table I.3 in the first two columns. The dependent variable is whether the woman has experienced physical domestic violence within the last twelve months. The two columns present the results for the two different samples of women. Including the women who are in a relationship but do not live with their partner does not affect the sign of the coefficients but their magnitude. There are also no important changes in the significance levels.

Our main variable of interest – the number of armed confrontations – is positive and highly significant. This shows that living in an area of higher conflict intensity increases the risk of being the victim of domestic violence. The average marginal effects of our conflict variable are 0.0013 and 0.0022 for the two samples respectively. Taking the difference between the most peaceful and the most conflict-intensive region, this would present a risk-increase between four to seven percentage points.

Theory suggests that the occurrence of domestic violence depends on the characteristics of the perpetrator and furthermore on the characteristics of the victim. An important point here is also whether and to which extent the victim accepts the violence before it decides to leave the relationship. This is influenced by incentives for remaining in the abusive relationship and the options to leave. In order to try to capture these possible determinants of domestic violence we introduce an array of control variables into our analysis.

The first control variables are wealth dummies. Since DHS surveys do not ask for income this is calculated from household assets and contained in the survey data. The reference category is the group of the poorest households. It can be seen that the risk of being victimized is significantly reduced in the two highest wealth categories. Wealth can be seen as stress reducing and wealthy people might rather be able to protect themselves, reducing the incidence of domestic violence. When including women that are not living with their partners, these variables can be interpreted as the alternative option because they refer to the wealth of the household where women can go if they do not live with their partner.

Table I.3: Probit regression; dep. variable: physical domestic violence last 12 months

	(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)
	All districts		Small districts		Confront. adj.
	Living together	All women	Living together	All women	All women
No. armed confrt. 03/04	0.0013*	0.0022**	0.0024***	0.0033***	0.0682***
	(1.87)	(2.15)	(3.71)	(6.66)	(5.96)
Age respondent	-0.0032***	-0.0046***	-0.0036***	-0.0048***	-0.0046***
	(-6.28)	(-9.79)	(-6.36)	(-9.88)	(-9.88)
Resp. primary edu.	-0.0045	-0.0151	-0.0087	-0.0156	-0.0160
	(-0.30)	(-1.08)	(-0.49)	(-0.95)	(-1.14)
Resp. secondary edu.	-0.0206	-0.0266*	-0.0208	-0.0236	-0.0270*
	(-1.24)	(-1.77)	(-1.06)	(-1.34)	(-1.80)
Resp. higher edu.	-0.0481**	-0.0509***	-0.0540**	-0.0556***	-0.0508***
	(-2.48)	(-2.87)	(-2.49)	(-2.74)	(-2.86)
Resp. currently working	0.0296***	0.0491***	0.0310***	0.0510***	0.0495***
	(5.11)	(7.92)	(4.92)	(8.46)	(7.98)
Sign. share of earnings	-0.0043		0.0012		
	(-0.55)		(0.15)		
Min. 6 months pregnant	-0.0677***	-0.0690***	-0.0767***	-0.0869***	-0.0686***
	(-3.14)	(-3.03)	(-3.04)	(-3.13)	(-3.01)
Exp. of violence in past	0.0385***	0.0459***	0.0412***	0.0465***	0.0463***
	(3.85)	(4.38)	(3.71)	(3.88)	(4.42)
Partner's age	-0.0019***		-0.0019***		
	(-4.86)		(-4.53)		
Part. primary edu.	-0.0049	-0.0075	-0.0105	-0.0146	-0.0074
	(-0.38)	(-0.66)	(-0.75)	(-1.14)	(-0.64)
Part. secondary edu.	-0.0130	-0.0169	-0.0222	-0.0233	-0.0167
	(-1.00)	(-1.34)	(-1.52)	(-1.61)	(-1.32)
Part. higher edu.	-0.0626***	-0.0747***	-0.0700***	-0.0783***	-0.0737***
	(-3.66)	(-4.33)	(-3.69)	(-4.20)	(-4.26)
Income category 2	0.0005	-0.0008	0.0052	-0.0004	-0.0012
	(0.05)	(-0.08)	(0.46)	(-0.03)	(-0.12)
Income category 3	-0.0085	-0.0135	-0.0065	-0.0181	-0.0145
	(-0.70)	(-1.12)	(-0.45)	(-1.36)	(-1.21)
Income category 4	-0.0449***	-0.0363**	-0.0410***	-0.0427***	-0.0389***
	(-3.15)	(-2.53)	(-2.65)	(-3.03)	(-2.72)
Income category 5	-0.0523***	-0.0689***	-0.0497**	-0.0795***	-0.0730***
	(-2.82)	(-3.94)	(-2.51)	(-4.70)	(-4.19)
Rural area	-0.0403***	-0.0413***	-0.0443***	-0.0535***	-0.0428***
	(-4.17)	(-3.60)	(-4.44)	(-4.81)	(-3.79)
No. children	0.0087***		0.0114***		
	(3.75)		(4.34)		
No. female adults in HH	-0.0207***		-0.0209***		
	(-4.15)		(-3.70)		
Pseudo R²	0.034	0.024	0.037	0.028	0.024
N	17319	21636	14176	17589	21636

Average marginal effects reported, standard errors are clustered at municipality level; t-statistics in parentheses; in the last column the armed confrontations variable has been divided by the square root of the district size; asterisks denote the following significance levels: * p<0.10, ** p<0.05, *** p<0.01

Living in a rural location also seems to reduce the risk of victimization.[16] A larger number of children is however associated with more domestic violence. The reason for this could be more stress in the family because of its size. It could also be an indication for more "traditional" family values, which promote having children and attach less intrinsic value to women. Children also represent an incentive for women to stay in the household as described in the theory part. We expect that in households with more female adults they might be better able to protect each other. Testing for this we find that higher numbers of female adults in the household indeed reduce victimization. The number of children and the number of female adults are not included when using the larger sample, as they do not always refer to a common household of the potential victims and perpetrators.

When it comes to the personal characteristics we find that older women are less likely to be abused. There can be various reasons why age should matter. One could guess that age increases experience and can give higher social status. Younger, less experienced women might be more easily convinced by their partner to stay using false promises and be less respected. Older partners are also less likely to be perpetrators of domestic violence; probably because on the one hand the relationship probably already proved to be stable and maybe on the other hand because people just become calmer with age.

Looking at education one should expect it to reduce violence, since more educated women have much better options to leave a relationship and do not need economic support from a male partner. Higher education will probably also be connected with more "modern" values, coming along with a reduced acceptance of violence against women. When it comes to the partner's education, the more educated men will most likely also have less "traditional" values and a higher capability of resolving disputes without violence. Since partners are often similar in both age and education, we expect these factors to have a strong effect, and use dummy variables for the different education levels as control variables. We find no significant effect for primary and secondary education (the reference category being no formal education, variables with a confidence level lower than 90% are considered insignificant in this chapter). Only women with a higher education have a significantly lower risk of becoming victims of domestic violence. Equally for the partner's education, only the higher education dummy is negative and significant (at more than the 99% level). Colombia is a highly unequal country and this picture could be a result of the strong separation between classes not only in financial aspects, but also in attitudes.

---

[16] This might be linked to reduced baseline levels of stress due to daily life running more quietly than in urban conglomerations. Anyway, we cannot circumstantiate this theory.

An unexpected result is that women who are currently working become victims more often, while one would expect that for them it would be easier to leave and thus become victimized less often. Our best explanation is that although the women say that they are working, the job or income are unobserved and therefore we know little about the actual character of the employment situation and level of independence it can render. Second we suspect that the higher incidence of violence in this case could be a result of jealous partners, because women who are working are more likely to leave the house and have contact with other men.

We try to control for the economic importance of the women's income for the household. Women are asked in how far their income is used for coverage of current expenses of the household; or if it is mainly saved. Our dummy variable, which assumes the value of one if the income of the women is at least partially used for current expenses, is not significant.

As a control we also use a dummy variable that assumes the value of one if the woman has, at the time of the interview, been pregnant for at least six months. We expect men to show more restraint when it comes to pregnant women in order to not harm the child. The variable captures whether the woman has been pregnant for at least half of the time the questions about domestic violence refer to. The result is as expected; the coefficient is negative and significant at the one per cent level.

In the survey women are questioned whether they had been the victim of violence in the past. It is a known phenomenon that people who were the victims of violence in the past have a higher tendency of becoming a victim again. To check for this we use a dummy assuming the value of one if the woman was in any way physically abused in the past by someone other than her current partner. The variable turns out positive and highly significant in all specifications.

In conclusion, it can be said that nearly all of our variables are significant at more than the 90% level and their signs in accordance with the theoretical considerations.

I.4.2 Alternative spatial identification and simulation of effect's magnitude

As mentioned before, problems might arise with the spatial identification when it comes to very large districts. In some Colombian districts the distance from one border point to another exceeds 400 kilometres. In this case our identification is more problematic because the fighting could have taken place very far from the interviewed households. In order to control for this we exclude all districts with an area of more than 2500 square kilometres. The results are reported in columns three and four of Table I.3 for the two different samples respectively. In these cases the coefficients of the confrontations variable increase strongly, as do the t-statistics. In column four, the average marginal effect for the conflict variable now reaches 0.0033. To give an idea of the dimensions of the effect we

make use of a simulation. For the model including all women in a relationship, in districts smaller than 2500 square kilometres, without observed conflict, the average probability of having been the victim of domestic violence in the last twelve months is about 19.8 per cent. Keeping all other characteristics for these women constant, but changing the conflict indicator to the highest observed level in the sample (33 confrontations in the two years considered), the probability of victimization is predicted again and the average increases to 32.1 per cent, which corresponds to an increase of 12.3 percentage points.

As another way to incorporate the differences in spatial identification, we adjust the conflict variable by the district size.[17] Again our variable of interest (conflict incidence) is highly significant. It now has a larger marginal effect (but the range of the variable is of course much smaller than before).

The opposite issue – likewise briefly mentioned above – is that people are most likely affected by the conflict in proximal districts especially if districts are rather small (some districts cover an area of less than 40 square kilometres). We do not suspect this to be a problem, because the conflict usually does not sharply stop at a district border, which is why conflict intensity measures for neighbouring districts are anyway correlated. We also use model specifications where we include the armed confrontations of nearby districts into the measure (not reported). These approaches show similar coefficients and significance values, thereby confirming our results, but not offering any further insights.

I.4.3   Alternative measures of domestic violence

Domestic violence does not only have physical aspects. There are many other possibilities of mistreatment in a relationship. Control over another person can for example also be achieved by means of threats (which can include threats of violence). To include non-physical aspects we use models with different definitions of domestic violence and check for the influence of external conflict. The indicators contained in the variables are listed in Table A.1 in Appendix A.1.

The first alternative measure includes threats as an indicator. It is coded one if the woman reports that her partner used at least one of the following threats against her in the last twelve months: threat to abandon her; to take away the children; to withdraw economic support; or if she was threatened with a weapon (as in our first indicator). We use these as they are all assertive and serious threats. The survey contains other questions about non-physical aspects that we did not

---

[17] The number of attacks is divided by the square root of the district area. The square root is used since we are more interested in distances than area sizes. Even though this is by far not perfect, it is a simple measure that comes closer to what we actually want to observe than using the area. Also the range of values is much smaller than for area sizes.

include. These are whether the partner did use expressions like "you are good for nothing"; did not allow the woman to see friends; limited contact with the family; or wanted to know where she was "all the time". We do not include these questions because we think that they could be mainly driven by jealousy (which we consider not to be conflict related) and at least some of them also depend on the personal perception of the woman.

The results of the model using threats as the dependent variable can be found in Table A.2 in Appendix A.3 in the first and second column for both samples of women. As can be seen, the coefficient of our conflict variable hardly changed. For the other variables there are changes in the coefficients; and even some variables that were statistically insignificant before now turn significant. The main interesting finding is that threats are already reduced at lower income and education levels.

When using the combined indicator including physical violence and threats, we also see nothing contradicting our prior findings. The results are reported in Table A.2 in columns three and four.

I.4.4   Possible endogeneity issues

Different arguments could be raised that suggest an endogeneity problem in the analysis. The first idea is that of reverse causality. Domestic violence could lead to women leaving their partner and because of a lack of alternatives they might subsequently join the guerrilla and participate in combat. Female soldiers in the Colombian guerrilla troops are common and this could theoretically increase the number of fighters and thereby also conflict intensity. The same argument could be made about children who experience or witness domestic violence at home, and therefore leave, subsequently joining the irregular forces. Child soldiers are also common in the Colombian conflict and most studies agree that many of the child soldiers join voluntarily to escape domestic violence or sexual abuse (*e.g.*, Brett, 2003, p.10). The argument about the conflict intensity is the same as for the women.

While we consider domestic violence to be a possible source for violent potential in the society and thereby future conflict, we do not think that this mechanism is very problematic for our spatial identification. The bias would only exist if domestic violence increased conflict intensity in exactly the district where the domestic abuse takes place. We consider this to be unlikely. The guerrilla troops are highly organized and disciplined military-like organizations. The locations of fighting are subject to strategic military choice. This means the guerrilla troops will not fight where they have the best recruiting opportunities, but instead will redeploy the recruits to the places where the fighting takes place. If therefore conflict intensity is determined by military strategy there will be no bias because

of reverse causality. A comprehensive overview over the organizational structures and composition of the irregular forces is given in Sanín (2008).

We think that roughly the same argument holds for unobserved factors. We consider it unlikely that there are factors that would influence military strategy at the group or state level and at the same time domestic violence. Even though both are forms of violence, they are exercised in completely different settings. Using violence against a partner is an individual decision. Armed confrontations are a mixture of planning, strategic interest and chance. Despite not considering it likely we try to control for an unobserved variable bias, caused by some unknown factor, underlying higher numbers of armed confrontations and higher incidence of domestic violence in the districts. We do this by using a two-stage instrumental variable approach. As instruments we employ geographical characteristics that influence the conflict by offering military advantages or economic incentives for the irregular forces.[18] The elevation-range is a measure for how mountainous the terrain is. It was calculated using high resolution satellite elevation data, *i.e.* 90 meter resolution Shuttle Radar Topography Mission (SRTM) data, from the *Centro Internacional de Agricultura Tropical* (CIAT). High ranges indicate a more rugged terrain offering cover and concealment for the guerrilla forces. If the district is characterized by oil production or exploration (referred to as oil region), it is more interesting for irregular forces, since an important source of money for all insurgents is the extortion of the oil industry, mainly through sabotage (destruction of pipelines). Therefore oil regions show more armed confrontations. The data on oil regions was obtained through *Sistema de información geográfica para la planeación y el ordenamiento territorial* (SIG-OT).

We expect these instruments to influence the conflict but not to have any effect on domestic violence. Domestic violence as discussed in the theory section has an instrumental and expressive function and will also depend on traditions or values. We cannot see any way how our geographical indicators could influence the perceived need of spouses to discipline their partner or create additional stress except through conflict. Looking at traditions and values, if a more mountainous terrain was associated with more secluded regions, it could be argued that a larger distance to civilization could mean less contact and more traditional values favouring violence against the partner. To check for this we looked at the correlation between the instruments and some general indicators of seclusion or isolation. On average the municipalities within mountainous terrain are somewhat closer to larger cities (most Colombian towns are located on the three mountain chains) and show slightly higher levels of development (measured by the percentage of households with

---

[18] More information on how the geographical data was obtained and how the indicators were calculated can be found in the technical notes in Appendix A.2.

unsatisfied basic needs, a multidimensional poverty measure published by the *Departamento Administrativo Nacional de Estadística* (DANE) so the exclusion argument is not valid.[19] The correlations between the oil region indicator and city distance or development measures are around -0.05 and 0.05 respectively. So there seems to be no important correlation. For both instruments the correlation with telephone coverage as a proxy for social isolation is between 0.03 and 0.05. Since we find no support for systematic differences between more or less mountainous or oil rich districts, we expect our instrument to have no other impact on domestic violence than through the channel of conflict.

The most common technique used for instrumental variable estimation is probably the two-stage least squares estimation.[20] We present the results for this approach in Table I.4, column 3. The coefficient of the conflict variable is positive and highly significant. The F-statistic in the first stage does not imply a weak instrument problem and the Sargan-score for the overidentification test cannot reject the null hypothesis that our instruments are valid at a conventional level. In this setting the effect of conflict is positive and highly significant.

We do however consider this approach with the standard procedure to be problematic for various reasons. In the first stage we are dealing with count data (the number of confrontations) and in the second stage with binary data. In both cases a linear model is not the best approximation. More importantly conflict as well as the instrumental variables is observed at the district level, while everything else is observed at the individual level. This means that each individual observation in the same district carries the same information about the conflict and instruments. Thereby in the first stage the influence of each district on the prediction of conflict depends on the number of individuals observed in the district (the first stage would have to be weighted). We have about 20.000 observed cases (because of the number of women) but the data originally only observes conflict information for the 230 districts where women were interviewed. The test statistics however are calculated as if there actually were 20.000 conflict observations. All second stage explanatory variables are also incorporated into the first stage. First we do not think that in the Colombian case the characteristics of households and individuals are good predictors of conflict; and more importantly, this procedure produces a different prediction of conflict for each individual in the second stage, while actually the prediction should be the same for all individuals in the same district.

---

[19] To check for seclusion and similar arguments, municipality level variables were added to the original model (distance to cities, forest density, coca production, *etc.*). While some of them had some explanatory power, the conflict indicator still remained significant (results not reported).

[20] We use the Stata command 'ivregression' with the 2sls option to estimate this model.

Table I.4: Regression domestic violence, IV two-stage regression models

	(1)	(2)	(3)
	Base model	Two-stage process: NB - Probit	Two-Stage Least Squares
No. armed confrontations 03/04	0.0022**	0.0070***	0.0105***
	(2.15)	(7.84)	(7.94)
Age respondent	-0.0046***	-0.0046***	-0.0044***
	(-9.79)	(-13.91)	(-12.94)
Resp. primary edu.	-0.0151	-0.0142	-0.0130
	(-1.08)	(-1.01)	(-0.89)
Resp. secondary edu.	-0.0266*	-0.0260*	-0.0231
	(-1.77)	(-1.77)	(-1.51)
Resp. higher edu.	-0.0509***	-0.0509***	-0.0453***
	(-2.87)	(-2.97)	(-2.58)
Resp. currently working	0.0491***	0.0490***	0.0489***
	(7.92)	(8.58)	(8.40)
Min. 6 months pregnant	-0.0690***	-0.0699***	-0.0631***
	(-3.03)	(-3.56)	(-3.31)
Exp. of violence in past	0.0459***	0.0432***	0.0478***
	(4.38)	(5.44)	(5.67)
Part. primary edu.	-0.0075	-0.0080	-0.0056
	(-0.66)	(-0.73)	(-0.49)
Part. secondary edu.	-0.0169	-0.0174	-0.0128
	(-1.34)	(-1.50)	(-1.06)
Part. higher edu.	-0.0747***	-0.0767***	-0.0643***
	(-4.33)	(-5.25)	(-4.37)
Income category 2	-0.0008	-0.0021	-0.0066
	(-0.08)	(-0.23)	(-0.71)
Income category 3	-0.0135	-0.0165	-0.0268**
	(-1.12)	(-1.63)	(-2.50)
Income category 4	-0.0363**	-0.0391***	-0.0522***
	(-2.53)	(-3.53)	(-4.48)
Income category 5	-0.0689***	-0.0706***	-0.0826***
	(-3.94)	(-5.51)	(-6.28)
Rural area	-0.0413***	-0.0435***	-0.0354***
	(-3.60)	(-5.39)	(-4.23)
Pseudo R² / R²	0.024	0.035	0.035
N	21636	17319	21346

Test statistics for first stage 2SLS: F=1432.73

Test for overidentification 2SLS: Sargan (score) chi2(1) = .457807 (p = 0.4987)

Average marginal effects reported except for 2SLS model; t-statistics in parentheses; asterisks denote the following significance levels: * $p<0.10$, ** $p<0.05$, *** $p<0.01$

Because of this we use an alternative approach as well. For the prediction of the number of armed

confrontations in the first stage we use a negative binomial regression, since we are working with

count data and we do not include any second stage regressors. The results of the first stage regression are shown in Appendix A.3 in Table A.3, column 1. Here we can see that our instrumental variables are highly significant but the pseudo R^2 is relatively low which indicates that the instruments are rather weak.

The second stage regression is as in our original analysis a Probit regression. Standard errors in our two-stage process are calculated using bootstrapping of both stages. The results are reported in Table I.4, column 2. All models are calculated using the sample for all women. The dependent variable is – only physical – domestic violence. Again the conflict variable increases domestic violence and is highly significant. The weak instrument problem does however cast some doubt on the validity of the results.

There are other potential instruments we did not use because we were not sure about the exclusion restriction. Using them together with the elevation and oil variables increases the explanatory power of the model used for the prediction of conflict (see columns 2 and 3 of Table A.3 in Appendix A.3), but the R^2 is never very high. They are however also reported since an exploration of factors determining the conflict intensity might be interesting. Unlike in the first stage model, we include all Colombian districts not only the ones where interviews were conducted in these models. If no other source is mentioned the information on the municipality indicators was obtained through SIG-OT. The conflict is more intense in regions with higher coca production (measured as the percentage of land in the district dedicated to growing coca plants, data from the *Observatorio de Drogas de Colombia* (ODC). This is an example for economic incentives since the insurgent forces rely heavily on income from trafficking drugs and intermediate products. If large proportions of the district surface are covered by forest this offers cover and concealment, rest and hiding places for guerrilla troops (forest cover data source: Food and Agriculture Organization Global Forest Resources Assessment 2000). The indicator has a positive and significant effect on conflict intensity. National highways are interesting for all sides as lines of communication, supply and transport of personnel (or interdiction of such). The coefficient of a dummy indicating the presence of a national highway within at least three kilometres of the district is positive and significant. The presence of an oil refinery is insignificant (there are only five in Colombia). Additional variables are the population density, the presence of an oil pipeline within a distance of less than three kilometres, the distance to the next

larger town and to the next army base,[21] indicating that conflict is actually happening closer to towns but further away from army bases.

In general we do not see indications that the analysis suffers from an endogeneity problem, but due to the lack of better instruments, we cannot give a definite proof for this.

I.5   Conclusion

We find evidence that the presence of intense conflict seems to increase the risk of women to be the victim of domestic violence. We suspect the effect of conflict to work through behavioural change in the form of higher acceptance of violence and emotional blunting, through more expressive violence as a release for heightened stress and through higher acceptance of domestic violence by the victims who are less willing to give up the protection of their family in an insecure environment. Our highest estimates show an increase of more than twelve percentage points in the incidence of domestic violence when comparing a peaceful and a conflict intensive environment which is a very large effect.

We are convinced that the effects of this change in behaviour and the long-term effect that domestic violence has on future generations will have serious consequences for the society as a whole. Violence from a conflict causes more violent behaviour and domestic violence affects future generations in similar ways. This cycle of violence will then be a major hindrance for the resolution of any conflict. The violence could also spread from the military conflict into the civil life, *e.g.*, in the form of different kinds of violent crime.

Colombia has a long history of violence which cannot only be seen in the conflict but also in its enormous crime rates and the intra-family violence. It is probably a sad example of how different forms of violence can reinforce each other. We suspect that the effect of conflict on domestic violence is not necessarily as large in other countries as it is in Colombia. Domestic violence is always very much influenced by the cultural and general environment and this could be more favourable in Colombia than in other conflict regions.

We think that conflict changes attitudes and behaviour, even though as shown by Blattman (2009) not always with only negative consequences. Understanding the impacts however is very important for conflict and post-conflict developments. More research on the individual and behavioural effects of conflict, especially on peoples' attitude towards violence and its comparison across regions should therefore prove to be very interesting areas of future research.

---

[21] The raw data to create those indicators was extracted as Geographic Information System (GIS) data in the form of ESRI shapefiles from SIG-OT, except for the location of army bases which was determined based on information available from the web pages of the Colombian National Army. For details see Appendix A.2.

Chapter II: Benefits trickling away – the health impact of extending access to piped water and sanitation in urban Yemen

Joint work[22] with Stephan Klasen[23], Tobias Lechtenfeld[24], and Kristina Meier[25]

Abstract

This chapter investigates the impact of piped water supply and sanitation on health outcomes in urban Yemen using a combination of quasi-experimental methods and results from microbiological water tests. Variations in project roll-out allow separate identification of water and sanitation impacts. Results indicate that access to piped water supply worsens health outcomes when water rationing is frequent, which appears to be linked to a build-up of pollution in the network. When water supply is continuous no clear health benefits are found compared to traditional urban water supply through water vendors. Connections to piped sewers can lead to health improvements, conditional on regular water supply. The findings suggest that investments in piped water supply should not be made when availability and reliability of water cannot be guaranteed.

Keywords: Child Health, Diarrhoea, Hygiene, Impact Evaluation, Infrastructure, Sanitation, Water Quality, Water Supply, Yemen

JEL classification: I10, I38, Q53

II.1   Introduction

Diarrhoea is one of the leading causes of child mortality in developing countries, with about 88 per cent of death due to diarrhoea caused by poor water quality and lack of sanitation (Black, Morris and Bryce 2003). Using cross-country observational micro data, it has been estimated that access to clean water and adequate sanitation could prevent 2.2 million child deaths every year (Fink, Günther and Hill 2011). However, recent impact evaluations of interventions have shown that improved water and sanitation infrastructure, while showing positive outcomes in other dimensions, have rarely been found to translate into better health outcomes. The reasons for this apparent lack of impact on health have only been partially identified (Waddington and Snilstveit, 2009).

It is widely accepted that piped household connections can lead to better health outcomes than public standpipes (Zwane and Kremer, 2007). In addition, most practitioners agree that investment in piped water should be complemented by piped sewerage and ideally also by hygiene training to reduce health risks from increased water use (World Bank, 2004). This is particularly important in cities, where crowded living conditions in combination with exposed wastewater can pose serious public health hazards. Yet, most of the empirical evidence on the health impacts of improved water supply and sanitation in developing countries comes from rural projects, with only limited external validity to cities.[26] Very different types of water supply and sanitation are used in urban areas, where water sources are typically found nearby, dwelling-based water access is much more common, and water vendors deliver water to the doorstep. Urban sanitation practices also differ from villages. Open defecation is virtually non-existent. Instead, toilets and latrines are widely used, which discharge into open sewers, underground cesspits, or piped sanitation systems.

This chapter contributes to the evaluation literature by examining the impact of interventions to provide piped water supply and sanitation on health outcomes in urban Yemen. It thereby contributes to the literature by examining the impact of such schemes in water-scarce regions where reliability of water supply can often not be assured. Yemen is a country that provides complex challenges to project designers: Renewable water sources are extremely scarce; annual population growth in urban areas is very high at 4.7 per cent; female education levels and general health knowledge are low; governance structures are weak; and social conflicts regarding land and water rights are frequent. To make matters worse, the majority of Yemen's population of 24 million lives in the very arid central mountains where ground water levels are rapidly falling (also due to heavy over-

---

[26] Recent examples of rural evaluations include Rauniyar *et al.* (2011) on Pakistan, and Fan and Mahal (2011) on India.

use by agriculture) and have reached depths of up to 1000 meters. While these conditions might seem extreme, similar environments can be found throughout the Middle East and North Africa.

The analysis uses detailed survey data from 2500 households covering treatment and control areas in several provincial towns. The study contributes to the empirical evidence base on urban water and sanitation access by using a mix of quasi-experimental methods which improve the robustness of the results over a reliance on a single method (given the assumptions underlying each). These include propensity score matching, instrumental variable regression and difference-in-difference analysis. A second contribution is the combination of results from water tests and disease incidence data (self-reported and facility-based). This allows a more in-depth analysis of the transmission channels from such interventions to health outcomes.

The main results show that when piped water supply is frequently interrupted, diarrhoea among children and adults actually *increases* as a result of piped water access. Additional access to piped sanitation does not show any significant health effects in such a setting of frequent water rationing. When piped water access is combined with reliable water flows, the negative health effects disappear (although no positive impact is found) and piped sewerage leads to a reduction of the health burden from water borne diseases. Additional trend analysis from secondary health facility data confirms this picture and provides some evidence that the short-term impact may have been positive but dissipated within a few months.

In order to identify the origins of water pollution at point-of-use, microbiological data was collected from 9000 water quality tests covering the water chain between wells and drinking cups. The epidemiological analysis suggests that more than half of the pollution at point-of-use comes from unreliable water supply and possible leaks in the water pipe system. In addition, a sizable share of water pollution can be directly attributed to unhygienic household behaviour.

The main policy message that emerges is that investment in piped water supply should not be made when reliable water supply cannot be guaranteed.[27] In such cases engaging with existing networks of trucked water vendors or designing public standpipes might generate better health outcomes at lower costs. In addition, the analysis suggests that rural and urban water supply and sanitation pose different challenges. Evaluation results from rural settings are unlikely to apply.

---

[27] See Vairavamoorthy, Gorantiwar and Mohan (2007) for an introduction to the design and control of intermittent water distribution systems.

The remainder of the chapter is structured as follows. Section II.2 reviews the literature on water, sanitation and hygiene and provides a brief project description. Section II.3 introduces the data and lays out the empirical strategy. Section II.4 discusses the impact results and investigates the origin of water pollution. Section II.5 provides some concluding remarks.

II.2   Background

Water and sanitation projects are widely assumed to lead to substantial health improvements. This section provides a brief review of what is known regarding the health impacts of piped water and sanitation systems. The second part of this section presents the project under investigation and provides details on project roll-out, selection effects, project intervention history, and explains some relevant engineering issues.

II.2.1   Literature review

Water, Sanitation and Hygiene

Large-scale investments in water and sanitation infrastructure are typically advocated to reduce diarrhoea and child mortality. For example, the Millennium Development Goal 10 addresses this point by encouraging developing countries to reduce the share of people without access to improved water and sanitation by half. The *Task Force on Water and Sanitation* from the related United Nations Millennium Project asserts that massive investments would indeed help to dramatically reduce the staggering number of 3900 children that die every day from a lack of proper water and sanitation (Bartram *et al.* 2005).

This notion that piped water supply will lead to improved health is shown for Argentina by Galiani, Gertler and Schargrodsky (2005), who investigate the impact of water utility privatization on the incidence of child mortality by exploiting the variation of public and private ownership of water utility across time and space. On average, the authors find reductions in urban child mortality of eight percentage points. The impact increases more than threefold for the poorest areas of the country.

Focusing on another middle-income country Gamper-Rabindran, Khan and Timmins (2010) present more heterogeneous findings. The marginal impact of piped water supply on infant mortality in Brazil is the largest in areas with high initial child mortality, unless underdevelopment is excessive. Using a quantile regression approach for panel data, the authors address a series of potential measurement problems and unobserved heterogeneity.

This picture from Latin America is largely confirmed by a meta-analysis covering 46 peer-reviewed studies, nearly all of them from South Asia and Sub-Saharan Africa, focusing on the health impacts of water, sanitation, and hygiene interventions in urban and rural areas (Fewtrell *et al.*, 2005). By

pooling the various results the authors find that the average intervention on water, sanitation, or hygiene helps to reduce the relative risk of diarrhoea by somewhere between 25-37 per cent. Importantly, water treatment at point-of-use (*e.g.* water boiling, use of water filters, *etc*.), is the most effective intervention. The authors also caution that estimates of the impact of hygiene training (*e.g.* hand washing) are likely to be overstated because they suffer from publication bias.

In direct contrast to the positive impacts of these case studies, the World Bank, in a recent review of its activities over the past decade, concludes that it is exceptionally rare to find any health improvements among beneficiaries of piped water schemes (World Bank, 2010). This picture is supported by a literature review of randomized control trials by Zwane and Kremer (2007). The authors assert that infrastructure projects in water and sanitation rarely translate into health improvements when effective hygiene training is lacking. Inadequate water storage and handling at the point-of-use can cripple any potential health effects from improved water sources. It is argued that smart hygiene training is urgently needed.

Designing effective hygiene interventions has proven extremely difficult because it implies changing habits of human behaviour. Adults are unlikely to change their hand washing practices even when familiar with health knowledge. In addition, even if behavioural changes can be induced, they tend to vanish soon after training, as found by Waddington and Snilstveit (2009) who review impact evaluations from 35 countries.

The central role played by behaviour and education is also confirmed by Jalan and Ravallion (2003) who apply propensity score matching techniques on a sample of Indian villages, where treatment villages were connected to piped water schemes. Prevalence and duration of diarrhoea is reduced for children living in households with piped water. However, the effect disappears when mothers have low education and the household is very poor, which is interpreted as a proxy for inadequate hygiene and water handling.

More explicitly, in a randomized control trial from urban Pakistan Luby *et al.* (2004) find that hand-washing substantially reduces diarrhoea among children. The diarrhoea incidence among children below 15 reduced by 53 per cent, while the duration of diarrhoea among infants reduced by 39 per cent. Unfortunately, the follow-up study reveals that the health effect had vanished within 18 months, because treatment households stopped purchasing soap for hand-washing (Luby *et al.*, 2009).

This lack of sustainability is also identified by Kremer and Miguel (2007), who show in randomised interventions at household and community level that health education does not affect behaviour. This is not to say that information campaigns will never work, but much still needs to be understood

about how to alter human health related behaviour (see Dupas, 2011, for a comprehensive introduction).

To date, no randomized studies exist that evaluate the impact of improved sanitation, such as piped sewerage. Norman *et al.* (2010) provide a meta-analysis of 25 observational studies, only 16 of which control for socio-economic differences between treatment and control groups. Nevertheless, their review is particularly relevant, as it focuses on urban settings in which households are connected to sewers, similar to that of the project design considered here. The estimates from the pooled meta-analysis indicate that large reductions of up to 30 per cent of relative risk of diarrhoea incidence are possible. While such results sound encouraging, the authors conclude that such estimates are largely inflated and driven by non-causal research designs. More importantly, the authors point out that sewerage networks are difficult to maintain as they require continuous water supply to avoid clogging. Sufficient water flow can be difficult to maintain in countries with insufficient ground water sources, which can easily jeopardize any positive health impacts of piped sanitation.

In fact, more reliable estimates of the health impact of improved sanitation tend to be much lower. A large-scale evaluation of water supply and sanitation using panel data in Mozambique finds that latrine use reduces the disease burden by a modest three percentage points. The overall disease burden decreased from 30 per cent at baseline to 27 per cent after the intervention (Elbers, Gunning and Vigh, 2012).

Overall, the impact of water and sanitation projects seems to be unclear. Most randomized and quasi-randomized studies lead to the conclusion that water and sanitation interventions can be expected to achieve their health targets if households use hygienic practices for storage and handling of drinking water (see for example Clasen *et al.*, 2007, Curtis and Cairncross, 2003, or Gundry, Wright and Conroy, 2004). How to best achieve and sustain such behaviour among poor households has yet to be shown and appears to be highly context specific (Waddington and Snilstveit, 2009).

The secondary effects from water and sanitation largely depend on positive health impacts. They include lower health care cost and increases in labour productivity and school attendance (Poulos *et al.*, 2006). In addition, access to piped water can lead to reduced water costs and increases in consumed water quantity. On the negative side, it is possible that in traditional societies piped household connections reduce the time women spend outside the house, with potentially detrimental effects on their social capital and learning through peers (Janssens, 2011). While the research design of this evaluation addressed all these issues, no impacts were found regarding such secondary effects.

II.2.2 Project description

More than two thirds of Yemen's population of 24 million lives in the rugged central highlands that range between 2000 and 3200 meters. Rainfall is rare and erratic and most people live from farming crops on small terraces on steep cliffs. The rest of the population lives in the desert-like coastal plain that stretches along the Red Sea in the west, and in small towns and hamlets on the southern coast. Very few people live in the eastern half of Yemen in what is commonly referred to as the 'Empty Quarter'. The urban population is largely engaged in local trade, the service sector or employed by the public sector.

The northern part of Yemen, which today comprises nearly 85 per cent of the population, only emerged from total isolation in 1970. Under the Imamite, modern water and sewerage networks, electricity and telephone grids, cars and many other technological innovations had been banned. Piped water supply is still lacking today in many urban areas, forcing families to primarily rely on water vendors who fill their tanks at agricultural wells outside the city. Very few wealthy families can afford to drill and operate their own borehole, especially in the mountains where the water table is several hundred meters deep.

The Provincial Towns Program (PTOP), a program of the Yemen government with partial support by German Financial Cooperation (by the development bank branch of the *Kreditanstalt für Wiederaufbau*, KfW) to improve urban water supply and sewage systems in Yemen, was designed to drill new wells in eight provincial towns, located along the southern and western coast and in the central mountains. Wells were equipped with pump stations and water treatment facilities which are operated by independent public water utility companies. Piped water schemes were designed to connect all existing households and have the capacity for future expansion. As the program led to an increase in water use it brought the existing waste water systems – consisting of underground cesspits and open sewers – to the verge of collapse. In response, sewerage schemes and wastewater treatment plants were constructed. They connect a large share of households with access to piped water to a sanitation network which allows wastewater to flow through sewerage pipes to a wastewater treatment plant.

For the impact evaluation two locations were selected by the research team based on five criteria. First, the town needed to be large enough to draw a sizeable sample. Second, a preference was given to towns in which connections to water or sewage systems were not universal in order to create in-town control groups that could be used during analysis to control for unobserved town effects. Third, the two towns were chosen to resemble the main topographic characteristics of Yemen. Fourth,

locations with a suitable nearby control town that is located in the same aquifer were given preference. Fifth, towns for which baseline data could be retrieved were preferred.

The first selected location, the city of Amran, is situated on the mountainous plateau, north of the capital Sana'a. The second city, Zabid, is near the Red Sea on the western coastal plain. In the mountain town, the water supply network was installed in 2002 and covers approximately 55 per cent of all dwellings. Of those with piped water supply, 58 per cent were connected to the new sewerage system in 2004. Connection to sewers is conditional on a piped water connection. In the coastal treatment town, all households were connected to the piped water scheme in 1998. The sewerage system became operational in 2005 and covers 85 per cent of the city. The remaining households use traditional cesspits and open drains to dispose their wastewater.

Within each town, construction followed topographical conditions. The piped networks are laid out in a way that they follow the natural slope of both cities. Central parts of the town were connected first, followed by outward extension into other neighbourhoods. Consequently, households without piped water and sanitation are only found in the outskirts of each town. The econometric implications of such cluster-level selection effects are discussed below. If a street was chosen for inclusion in the project, all households were connected with no option of individual opt-in or opt-out.

The flow of water for connected and unconnected households is illustrated by Figure II.1: Water supply chain and test points. For households with improved water supply, groundwater is pumped from boreholes located outside the treatment towns. The water runs in large pipes to the water utility for chlorination. A few major underground feed-pipes then carry the clean water to distinct areas of the town. Smaller distribution pipes branch off at control points. The latter can be used to shut off entire neighbourhoods for repairs or water rationing. The smaller distribution pipes run underneath streets and alleys and connect each building at ground level.

Figure II.1: Water supply chain and test points
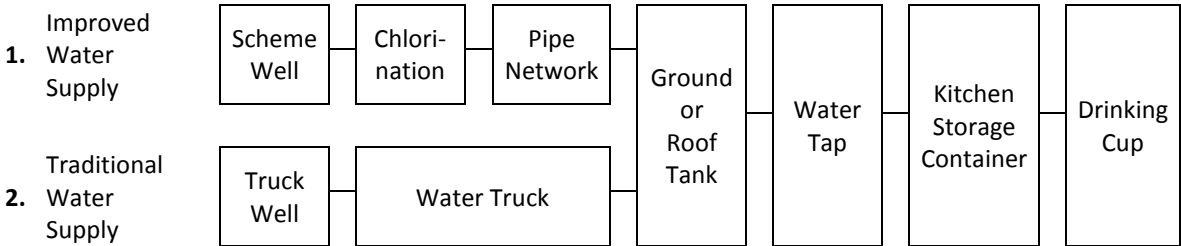
In the mountains, households typically store the water temporarily in large metal tanks with an average capacity of 2-3 cubic meters. Water storage tanks are located in the compound (ground tanks) or on roof tops (roof tanks). From the storage tank, a pipe runs to a water tap, typically located in the kitchen. For cooling purposes, virtually all families fill their daily drinking water in a smaller

kitchen storage container every morning, which holds 10 to 20 litres. For drinking, many families share a single cup when drinking from the kitchen storage container.

In areas where no piped water is available, drinking water is purchased from water vendors using water trucks (mountainous region) or donkey carts (coastal region). Water vendors obtain their water from agricultural wells outside the town. Truck water is directly pumped into the water storage tank. It is also purchased by connected households during extended periods of water rationing.

II.3 Data and empirical strategy

II.3.1 Data

This chapter uses an array of data sources, combining household survey data, microbiological water test results and secondary data from schools and health facilities.[28]

Household Sample

The household survey was conducted in the four treatment and control towns in the second half of 2009, covering 2518 randomly selected households. The sampling frame is based on an innovative remote aerial mapping approach using satellite images, where each rooftop is assigned a building identification number. The sample is then drawn from this building inventory. This is done by dividing each town into equally spaced clusters, all of which entered the sample to ensure representative coverage of all urban neighbourhoods. Households within each cluster are drawn following a stepwise procedure beginning from a random starting point. In these provincial towns, very few buildings are home to more than one family. In such cases, an additional sampling-procedure allowed field supervisors to select a random household for the interview. Overall, sampling based on satellite images facilitates field work, since interviewers can use detailed street maps where selected houses are marked. Even in small alleys exact locations can be confirmed using Global Positioning System (GPS) coordinates. In the absence of recent reliable and available census data, such an approach is the best available alternative to ensure proper sampling.

A cross-sectional baseline survey exists from 2004 for the mountain town of Amran that was used to ex-ante evaluate the feasibility of the intervention. The baseline instrument contains questions on education, health, and demographic structure which were replicated in the endline survey to allow the calculation of double differences.

---

[28] The questionnaires used to collect data in the main household survey, the water test supplementary survey, and at education and health facilities are provided in English language in the appendices of Klasen *et al.* (2011).

Outcome Variables

Following best-practice in survey design, the household interviews collected information on symptoms rather than diseases. In environments with poor health knowledge, limited access to well-equipped health facilities and existing folk medicine, self-reported symptoms are much more reliable. A useful categorization of water borne diseases and transmission channels has been compiled by Esrey *et al.* (1991), on which the list of symptoms was developed and tested with medical personnel from Yemen.

Diarrhoea is the principle predictor of water borne diseases. Secondary symptoms include vomiting, abdominal pain and fever which are combined with data on the incidence of watery and bloody diarrhoea (dysentery) to create an overall disease measure for robustness analysis. Additional outcomes are school and work days missed due to water-related symptoms. Analysis takes place at the household level, using morbidity rates within each household. The *Severity* indicates the share of reported symptoms classified as severe. Since disease incidence among small children is a crucial impact indicator, the variables *Disease*, *Diarrhoea* and *Severity* are also included for the subgroup of children up to the age of five.[29]

Main Covariates

In line with existing empirical literature, a set of household characteristics is included in the analysis to control for differences in hygienic practices, education, wealth, and demographic structure. Education, hand washing, soap use, water purification (incl. the use of water filters, chlorination and boiling), and knowledge about water-related diseases are expected to reduce the relative disease burden. Respondents were also asked about problems with water supply, water quality and the sewerage system, which are expected to be negatively associated with health. The demographic structure of the household might also affect the disease burden. Infants and young children are prone to water borne diseases given their weak immune system. In addition, illnesses spread fast within households, putting more people at risk in larger households.

Wealth is an important control for unobserved health practices. At the same time, perceived health status is typically negatively correlated with income which could create a reporting bias among the better-off and is important to be controlled for. House owners are expected to invest more into water tanks and pipes and are exposed to reduced health risks.

---

[29] For a full list of variables see Appendix B.1.

Water Test Data

To supplement survey data on subjective water quality with hard evidence, water tests were conducted using physical, chemical, and microbiological indicators.[30] While water pollution can have many origins, this study focuses on *Escherichia coli* (e.coli), a bacterium that is associated with human faeces. E.coli directly causes dysentery, sometimes referred to as bloody diarrhoea, and is a common indicator for health studies in the developing world. It is easily detectable in water samples and there is at most incomplete resistance as a result of continued exposure.

Water tests were conducted along the water supply chain of a random subsample of 500 households after the main household survey was completed. Additional interviews with well owners, water vendors and household members complemented the tests.

Health Facility Data

Data on diagnosed illness was collected on a monthly basis spanning twelve years from 1998 to 2009. Based on inpatients and outpatients registration books with information on diagnosis and prescription, the incidence of several water-related diseases was aggregated, including diarrhoea.[31] Because of data gaps and changes in official coding, diarrhoea data can be used from 2004 to 2009 for the mountain towns. This covers the period from just before the sanitation intervention until the endline survey. For the coastal towns, trends can only be compared between 2008 and 2010 which is ex-post for water and sanitation. Health facility data are coded as monthly stock variables and are logged and deseasoned for analysis. Only diarrhoea incidence is used for analysis given data gaps in the other indicators.

II.3.2 Empirical strategy

The empirical strategy does not rely on a single preferred method or result. Instead, a wide array of quasi-experimental approaches is used to identify robust relations between treatment and health outcomes. This is necessary because access to piped water and sanitation is purposively assigned to entire neighbourhoods and streets, given the enormous financial inefficiencies that would result from randomized treatment. In effect, systematic differences between treatment and control areas might

---

[30] Physical indicators are Electrical Conductivity, Total Dissolved Solids and pH Value. Chemical indicators are Hardness; and content of Calcium, Chloride, Total Iron and Fluoride (only measured at source) and Nitrate and Sulphate (measured at source and point-of-use). Biological indicators are contamination with e.coli and Total Coliform.

[31] The water-related diseases are bilharzias (intestinal and urinary) and schistosomiasis, amoebic dysentery and giardia, diarrhoea, hepatitis A, typhoid, malaria and intestinal worms (including flukes, hookworm, pinworm, roundworm, tapeworms, whipworm, and others).

exist which can influence the success of the intervention. To illustrate this crucial point, consider a simple impact model

$$y_i = \alpha + x_i'\beta + T_i\gamma + \varepsilon_i \qquad\qquad\text{(II.1)}$$

where y_i denotes the outcome (*e.g.* diarrhoea) for observation i, x_i' is a vector of covariates, β is a vector of parameters, T_i is a variable indicating treatment, and ε_i is an idiosyncratic error term, with $\varepsilon \sim N(0, \sigma^2)$. In the case of non-random assignment of treatment T, $\text{Cov}(T, \varepsilon) \neq 0$, which biases γ, the estimated impact of treatment. The possibility of selection bias is addressed using propensity score matching and instrumental variables regressions on cross-sectional survey data. Difference-in-difference impact estimates are also presented using the baseline data.

Propensity Score Matching

In all Propensity Score Matching (PSM) procedures, treatment and control households are matched on their predicted probability of being part of the treatment group (Rosenbaum, Rubin 1983 Rosenbaum and Rubin, 1983). The model used to estimate the propensity score should include all covariates that determine treatment without being affected by treatment themselves. The propensity score model used here includes the education level of the household head, household size, dependency ratio, house ownership, and an indicator for knowledge of water-related diseases.[32] Since PSM is limited to observable characteristics results may still be biased if the selection of the treatment group was driven by unobservables. Usually one would presume that such a bias would overestimate positive effects of an intervention to the extent that neighbourhoods selected for treatment might have unobserved favourable characteristics that would lower their disease incidence.

Instrumental Variables

The instrumental variable (IV) approach is a complementing alternative of dealing with potential selection bias when such bias is due to unobservables. The impact is calculated from the predicted treatment status $\hat{T}_i$, which is estimated by a set of instrumental variables that are not correlated with the error term ε_i; and which may not affect the outcome variable directly.

The instruments used here are based on project documents and in-depth interviews with stakeholders. The construction of water and sanitation schemes followed three principles which can be exploited as instruments. First, construction always began in the city centre. Second, the Old City

---

[32] A large set of alternative model specifications was tried, including the use of geographical conditions (distance to city centre, rocky ground), age of house, and other socio-economic variables, none of which improved performance of the propensity score model.

was prioritized, where buildings are substantially older. Third, in the mountain region pipe construction excluded streets built on particularly hard rock due to increased construction cost. Suitable instruments are therefore *Distance to the City Centre* of each household, the *Age of the House* and *Rocky Ground* around the dwelling, all of which perform well with regard to first stage F-tests[33] and Hansen tests. While these instruments are useful when quantifying the impact using the in-town control group, an additional binary instrument taking the value of one for the *Project Town* is included when the sample contains both in-town and out-town control groups in order to allow for unobserved differences between the control groups.

Double Differencing

Double Differencing (DD) is an alternative for identifying causal effects when baseline data is available and no time-variant unobservable confounders have affected the outcome. The analysis is done using mean point estimates from two cross sectional surveys, which accounts for differences in sample size. Since sanitation is only provided to a sub-sample of the water treatment group, which can be used to quantify the relative sanitation impact, by taking the additional difference between the double difference results of piped water and access to piped sewerage. This DD analysis can only be done for Amran as the baseline survey is only available for that town. Questions for eliciting the disease burden are identical in the baseline and endline survey instruments. However, even in case of differences in measurement, DD results would be unbiased because the disparities would cancel out.

Trend Analysis using Health Facility Data

Moving averages are used to estimate trends of between-town differences in waterborne disease burden. Unfortunately, within-town comparisons are not possible because record books of health facilities do not contain full addresses but only city of origin of patients. For the mountain towns, the available data allow an investigation of the sanitation intervention. For the coastal towns, trends can only be compared over the three years prior to the endline survey when all interventions had long been completed. This provides an interesting opportunity for investigating long term effects by using information on converging or diverging trends.

Potential Caveats

Health outcomes such as diarrhoea incidence are self-reported and might be biased for two reasons. First, poorer people tend to underreport the disease burden of very common illnesses, which can make wealthier cohorts look worse off. Second, health knowledge may be limited among less

---

[33] The only exception is the F-test for the analysis of sanitation in the coastal town, which is always well below critical reference values recommended by Stock and Yogo (2005). This means that results there have to be interpreted with caution.

educated cohorts and hence symptoms underreported. While it cannot be excluded that such measurement bias affects the survey data, relative comparisons between treatment and control groups will be unbiased when measurement error affects both groups in a similar way. Nevertheless, a wealth indicator is used in the analysis to directly control for measurement bias.

Externalities of water and health related interventions have been shown for rural setting (Miguel and Kremer, 2004). In the case of benefit spillovers to the control group the econometric identification of the causal impact would be invalid. This could be the case if the risk of water-borne diseases such as cholera is reduced for the entire urban population even though only part of the population is connected to improved water sources. It might also happen if the use of piped sanitation by part of the populations reduces the risk of overflow of open sewers among unconnected households along with a reduction in health risk. In such situations the health outcomes of the control population would increase due to the project. Since the impact estimates rely on the differences in health outcomes, the estimates would be biased downwards. The use of control towns addresses this problem. Since control towns are located at a distance of 10 to 20 kilometres from treatment towns, externalities affecting health risk can be excluded.

II.4   Results

This section begins with the results from the quasi experimental impact estimation. The second part of this section discusses possible causes of water pollution between water source and point-of-use to explain the limited health impact of the intervention.

II.4.1   Project impact

a. Evidence from the descriptive analysis

The descriptive analysis of disease incidence among treatment and control groups reveals an a priori unexpected picture in Table II.1. Connection to piped water is associated with a higher disease burden in both the mountains (Amran) as well as the coast (Zabid). At the same time, households connected to the scheme in Amran complain about substantial rationing, where no water is available 60 per cent of the time. As a result, more than 25 per cent of treatment households did not use any piped water in the 90 day reference period. In comparison, no rationing is reported in the coastal treatment area, and consequently all surveyed households used only piped water in the reference period. Among mountain households with access to piped water and sanitation, about 11 per cent of household members reported water-related symptoms during the past month. For children aged zero to five this share is four times higher, and such higher disease incidence among treated households also carries over to the severe disease indicators. In the coastal treatment town, the disease burden is more pronounced among households with access to piped water only, while the additional access to

sanitation for those households appears to reduce disease incidence. Regarding secondary effects (workdays or schooldays missed), there are no clear patterns; if anything more work- and schooldays are missed in treatment than control households.

Table II.1: Disease burden among household members

Region	Indicator / Connection	Disease	Disease (child)	Diarrhoea	Diarrhoea (child)	Severity	Severity (child)	Workdays missed	Schooldays missed	Households
		Mean prevalence among applicable household members								*N*
Mountainous	Water	9.9	30.2	5.3	13.8	7.6	34.8	0.9	0.3	201
	Water & Sanitation	11.2	46.8	5.8	15.9	8	44.3	6.4	1.4	270
	None	8.2	25.8	3.4	9.8	6.1	27.6	1.8	0.2	374
	Control	6	20.5	3.3	4.9	5	21.8	2.3	0.1	298
Coastal	Water	11.2	37.1	5.1	11.8	6.6	37.6	1.3	5.4	127
	Water & Sanitation	7.2	26.1	3.5	10.6	4.7	29.1	1.6	1.4	714
	Control	6.4	21.9	3.3	8.2	4.3	17.9	1.8	1.2	434
	Total	**7.9**	**28**	**3.9**	**10.2**	**5.6**	**28.7**	**2.2**	**1.2**	**2418**

Note that in the coastal treatment town there is no in-town control group ("None") available.

b. Evidence from propensity score matching

Water

Table II.2 shows the matching results for access to piped water.[34] The first two columns show the results for the between-town analysis by region. The results suggest sizable and significant increases in disease burden among mountain households connected to piped water. Children in particular are affected by an increase of diarrhoea incidence of nearly ten percentage points. The picture is confirmed by the severity of diarrhoea among children and by the aggregate measure of five waterborne diseases. The effect remains significant for the aggregate waterborne disease incidence and its severity for all age groups, implying a widespread increase in illnesses in the population. In the coastal region, between-town matching shows an increase in total disease incidence by about four percentage points among households with access to piped water; but results for the other disease indicators are insignificant. In addition, the number of missed school days seems to have slightly increased among school-aged children.

The third group of columns in Table II.2 contains the findings of within-town matching in the mountain region. Again, adverse health effects of piped water are found, albeit with somewhat lower

---

[34] Results are reported for radius matching using a calliper of 0.05. Similar results are obtained when applying smaller or larger callipers, nearest neighbour matching, and kernel matching using a Gaussian kernel with different bandwidths. Refer to the appendix of Klasen *et al.* (2011) for a more complete overview of these results.

magnitude, especially for children up to five years of age. Recall that drinking water quality cannot be included in the propensity model, because it is directly affected by treatment. Given that part of the treatment group regularly uses traditional water sources during periods of water rationing, *i.e.* the same water as the in-town control group, the negative health impact from the in-town matching is a conservative estimate and possibly underestimated.[35]

Table II.2: Propensity score matching – impact of water

| Outcome | Coastal Region | | | Mountainous Region | | | | | |
| | out-of-town control | | | out-of-town control | | | in-town control | | |
	ATT	t-value	N	ATT	t-value	N	ATT	t-value	N
Disease	0.0399**	1.98	560	0.0455***	2.76	488	0.0268*	1.72	567
Diarrhoea	0.0111	0.73	560	0.0193	1.53	488	0.0195*	1.75	567
Severity	0.0184	1.21	560	0.0329**	2.25	488	0.0239*	1.76	567
Workdays missed	-0.0074	-0.59	560	-0.0076	-0.6	496	-0.003	-0.19	573
Schooldays missed	0.0441*	1.81	560	0.0018	0.84	496	0.0018	0.57	573
Disease (child)	0.1328	1.36	338	0.1078*	1.71	361	0.0631	1.17	409
Diarrhoea (child)	0.0151	0.38	338	0.0954***	3.19	361	0.0412	1.3	409
Severity (child)	0.1879	1.62	338	0.1347*	1.87	361	0.1041	1.63	409

Note: To analyse the impact of piped water supply only, the treatment group excludes households with access to the sewerage system. For the between-town calculations only out-town control groups are used. Matching with the in-town control group is only possible in the mountainous region. ATT indicates the Average Treatment effect on the Treated.

Sanitation

Since improved sanitation is conditional on access to piped water, the impact of sanitation in Table II.3 is estimated by matching households from the water group (controls) to households from the water and sanitation group (treatment). Estimates need to be interpreted relative to the impact of piped water.

In the mountain town, additional negative health effects are found for children. The difference between the matched treatment and control groups is nearly 14 percentage points. These detrimental health outcomes lead to a significant increase of days that children miss school due to waterborne diseases. The effect for missed work days is also significant. For the coastal town, no health effect is found for children or health related absenteeism. Interestingly, a slight reduction of the disease incidence of almost four percentage points is found for the overall population.

---

[35] In theory, positive health externalities of piped water might be an alternative explanation for the more similar health outcomes within the mountain project town. They are not very likely, given that health outcomes are in fact worse among the treatment group.

Table II.3: Propensity score matching – impact of sanitation

Outcome	Coastal Region out-of-town control			Mountainous Region out-of-town control		
	ATT	t-value	N	ATT	t-value	N
Disease	-0.0373*	-1.79	841	0.0187	0.99	458
Diarrhoea	-0.0207	-1.3	841	0.0087	0.62	458
Severity	-0.0244	-1.53	841	0.0077	0.48	458
Workdays missed	0.0086	0.78	841	0.0567*	1.87	469
Schooldays missed	-0.0346	-1.32	841	0.0097*	1.75	469
Disease (child)	-0.1172	-1.03	418	0.1382*	1.73	327
Diarrhoea (child)	-0.0223	-0.51	418	0.015	0.4	327
Severity (child)	-0.0899	-0.64	418	0.0684	0.84	327

Water rationing – which is common in the mountain town – could be the transmission channel for the additional disease burden from the sewerage scheme. The probable reason is that without regular water flow, sewers are prone to clogging.

c. Evidence from instrumental variable regressions

Water

The IV results for access to piped water are summarized in Table II.4 (see full results in Appendix B.3). Specification tests suggest the validity of the instruments. The results are very similar to the matching estimates.[36] Access to water supply in the mountain town is associated with a higher disease burden for children and adults. Again, the magnitude of the impact is larger for children.

The covariates of the IV regressions shed some light on the transmission channel of the observed negative impact. Access to *Sanitation* is insignificant in all specifications, suggesting that a connection to piped sewers does not have sizable health effects in this project. The positive and significant effect of *Trucked Water* used by connected households indicates that illnesses are partly caused by contaminated water purchased from tanker trucks. No effect is found for *Water Purification,* probably due to the surprisingly small number of households engaging in water treatment at point-of-use. Among the socio-economic factors, the most influential variables are *House Ownership* which reduces

---

[36] As already mentioned in the methodology section, a dummy variable indicating location in Amran is included as an additional instrument in the analysis. As a robustness check, the analysis is repeated without the dummy, using only the in-town control group for water in Amran. Results were very similar in magnitude, although some of the coefficients were no longer significant (also due to the much smaller sample size). Nevertheless, the general conclusion of a negative effect of piped water on health remains clearly visible and is significant for several of the disease indicators.

disease incidence, and the *Share of Children and Elderly* living in the household which increases the disease incidence. These effects are consistent in both regions.

Table II.4: Instrumental variable analysis – impact of water

Outcome		Mountains		
Water	Impact	F-test First Stage	Hansen p-value	N
Disease	0.0723**	78.71	0.561	1072
Diarrhoea	0.035	78.71	0.380	1072
Severity	0.0669**	78.71	0.294	1072
Disease (child)	0.213*	57.76	0.795	784
Diarrhoea (child)	0.155***	57.76	0.645	784
Severity (child)	0.307**	57.76	0.557	784

Note: The sanitation indicator is included as an additional covariate in the analysis to allow the use of the full sample. There is no in-town control group for water in Zabid, as all households are connected to piped water, which is why the analysis cannot be meaningfully performed for the coastal region.

Sanitation

The results for sanitation in the mountain area do not show significant positive or negative effects for any of the outcome variables or age groups (Table II.5). Estimates for the coastal region cannot be meaningfully interpreted as we have a weak instrument problem. This could explain why IV results are not significant with regard to sanitation, despite the coefficients having the same direction as the matching results.[37]

Table II.5: Instrumental variable analysis – impact of sanitation

Outcome		Mountains				Coastal		
Sanitation	Impact	F-test First Stage	Hansen p-value	N	Impact	F-test First Stage	Hansen p-value	N
Disease	0.008	46.91	0.887	436	-0.152	3.16	0.330	826
Diarrhoea	0.011	46.91	0.335	436	-0.071	3.16	0.420	826
Severity	0.024	46.91	0.518	436	-0.079	3.16	0.792	826
Disease (child)	0.103	34.38	0.907	311	-0.552	4.938	0.703	411
Diarrhoea (child)	0.001	34.38	0.632	311	-0.187	4.938	0.496	411
Severity (child)	0.158	34.38	0.667	311	-0.626	4.938	0.793	411

---

[37] Values of the first stage F-test are below critical reference values recommended by Stock and Yogo (2005).

Overall, propensity score matching and instrumental regressions generate very similar results. Water access appears to have increased health problems in the mountain town where water rationing is frequent, with access to sanitation aggravating the unintended health consequences even further. In turn, no health improvements are found in the coastal town related to piped water supply, while piped sewers are associated with a reduced disease burden.

d. Evidence from double difference calculations

Analysis using cross-sectional survey data from before and after the water and sanitation project confirms the above results. Table II.6 shows the disease burden for diarrhoea among all age groups, which has increased by 1.37 percentage points in the mountain town among households connected to piped water.[38] This is considerably less than the matching and IV estimates, because it is relative to the previous water supply scheme that was replaced by the project. At baseline, a water pipe scheme existed of abysmal quality. In fact, it was so inadequate und unreliable that the city qualified for participating in the project to upgrade its water supply network. The old water system is very likely to have posed serious health threats to the connected population.

Table II.6: Double difference results for water and sanitation

Mountains	Diarrhoea	Baseline	Endline
	Percentage Points	*Individuals*	*Individuals*
First Difference: change over time			
Water	3.44	1744	1832
Sanitation	4.35	1744	2256
Control	2.07	1118	2922
Double Difference: treatment – control			
Water	1.37	Impact of Water	
Sanitation	2.27		
Treatment Difference	0.91	Impact of Sanitation	

Access to sanitation is conditional on access to water. By splitting the sample of households connected to water in two groups defined by access to sanitation, the difference between treatments can be obtained, yielding impact of sanitation in addition to water. Estimates for the mountain town

---

[38] Results are point estimates based on two cross sectional surveys covering the entire city at baseline and endline. T-tests indicate that these results are significant at conventional levels. To exclude possible confounding effects from population growth the analysis is also done with a restricted endline sample that only includes neighbourhoods surveyed at the time of baseline, which does not yield very different results. Analysis cannot be performed for the coastal region because no in-town control group for water exists at the endline.

imply an additional increase of diarrheal disease incidence by 0.91 percentage points when households are connected to piped sewerage.

e. Evidence from health facility data

To complement the health impacts from self-reported health, secondary data from health facilities is analysed which contains the monthly diarrhoea incidence. Figure II.2 shows relative diarrhoea incidence between treatment and control towns for each region for children.

For the mountain region, the relative disease burden in the treatment town increases sharply for children during the first year after project completion (see the low starting level in 2004, when treatment households were connected to sanitation).[39] Unfortunately, limited data availability means that no ex-ante trend can be established to further analyse why the disease burden worsened over time.

Figure II.2: Differences in diarrhoea incidence between treatment and control towns
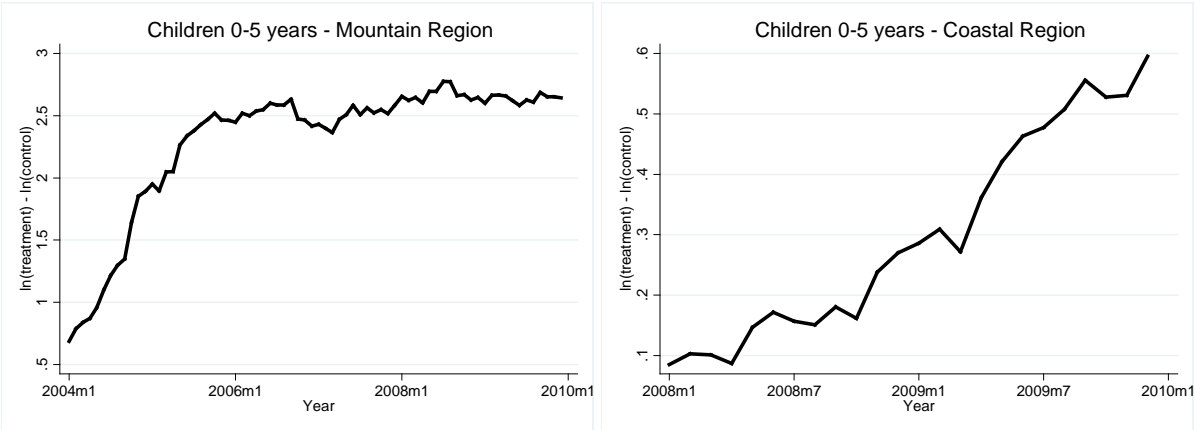
The trends level off after a few months, but remain on a much higher level than in the control town. The effect is very pronounced and remains visible even though in-town control households with a lower reported disease burden were also visiting the health facilities of the treatment town.[40] For the coastal region, the estimated trend of the relative disease burden is increasing over time in the treatment town, although the variance is quite large. Since the sanitation and water projects have been completed before 2008, the figure only provides a snap-shot of a medium-term impact. But these data clearly are consistent with our other analyses that suggest that extension of water and

---

[39] In principle, the same result can be caused by a major outbreak of waterborne diseases in the control town, *e.g.* cholera. However, the control town health data do not show a surge in diarrheal diseases in the first half of 2004 but rather a decline.

[40] Since reported health status is similar among control groups inside and outside of treatment towns the possibility of in-town control households driving the results can be excluded.

sanitation access did not improve health outcomes, but appears to be associated with a worsening of health outcomes in treatment towns.

II.4.2 Sources of water pollution

The objective of the Provincial Towns Program was to improve the health situation of the population by providing access to safe drinking water and an effective sanitation infrastructure. The impact results show that health did not generally improve from the investments in water and sanitation. Only in the coastal town marginal reductions in disease burden was achieved for households additionally connected to sanitation. This raises the question about causes of water pollution in households connected to piped water.

Microbiological tests reveal that water pollution at point-of-use is rampant in treatment and control areas (see Table B.3 and Table B.4 in Appendix B.2). In the mountains, e.coli was detected inside the drinking cup of 20.0 per cent of households only connected to piped water. Virtually the same incidence (20.3 per cent) is found among control households using traditional water sources. This implies that the water scheme made no difference to water quality at point-of-use. Worse, e.coli incidence among households that are additionally connected to sewers is at a staggering 38.4 per cent. This is very similar to the e.coli incidence in the mountain control town without any water or sanitation facilities (40.0 per cent). In the coastal area, water pollution at point-of-use is even higher, affecting 46.6 per cent of all households connected to piped water and 36.6 per cent of households connected to water and sanitation.

Two major channels for water pollution exist that could help explain these findings. First, the piped network might be a source of pollution, for instance through broken pipes, insufficient chlorination, and frequent water rationing. Second, unhygienic household behaviour when storing and handling water might be an additional cause.

a. Pollution from the pipe system
Following the water from the well to the household, several sources of contamination are possible. First, no signs of pollution are found in any of the wells of the water schemes. Second, in the coastal town one of the two main water pipes running into the town was tested positive for e.coli pollution, which indicates leaks in that pipe. The main pipes in the mountains were clean. Third, leaks in the small distribution pipes might cause additional pollution, which leads to streets with an above average pollution level. As shown graphically in Figure B.1 in Appendix B.4, two close-to-linear patterns – in parts coinciding with such streets – appear to be identified for the coastal town of Zabid, implying wastewater intrusion into the drinking water system.

b. Pollution from water storage tanks

Most households store drinking water in large tanks which could be a source of pollution. Descriptive analysis suggests that water tanks are not related to water pollution. This includes the existence of a water tank, the size of the tanks, the storage time of water in the tanks, and the location of the tank (roof versus ground). In addition, none of the surveyed households is trying to reduce pollution in their tank by adding chorine or other methods, or has cleaned the inside of their tank in the twelve months prior to the interview. In effect, water tanks do not help explain any differences in water pollution at point-of-use. Since tanks are closed and out of reach of humans, e.coli pollution found inside the tanks must come from the pipe network or from truck water pumped into the tanks.

c. Pollution from water rationing

The impact estimates show a negative effect from piped water in the mountain town, which suggests a mechanism of water pollution not found in the coastal town. Since pollution of the main pipes can be ruled out, the remaining suspect is irregular water supply. Such water rationing is found in all neighbourhoods of the mountain town but is only reported by a fraction of the coastal households. Interviews with the engineers of the water utility confirm that water availability is very irregular in the mountains since three out of five source wells have fallen dry shortly after project inauguration. The resulting water flow is insufficient to provide permanent drinking water for the entire town. Consequently, water is only available on a few days per week in each neighbourhood.

Epidemiological literature has shown that water rationing itself can be a serious cause of pollution through three channels (see Le Chevallier, Friedman *et al.*, 2003, for an introduction to the topic and Semenza *et al.*, 1998, for an excellent empirical contribution from an urban setting). First, during periods of rationing, microfilm grows in the pipes and is flushed out through household connections when water pressure resumes. Second, without reflux valves, water schemes are prone to pollution reversely entering from water taps, when falling water pressure sucks in any residues. Third, given the change in water pressure, even minor pipe leaks can cause pollution of the piped water during rationing. This is especially important where water pipes run nearby underground cesspits, which is reportedly very common in urban Yemen.

In addition, extended periods of water rationing cause connected households to refer to traditional water sources. Pollution in the tanks could thus stem from households using a mix of improved and traditional sources. In fact, controlling for the mixing of water sources during the past four weeks helps to explain about half of the e.coli pollution in water storage tanks. This source of pollution is a direct consequence of water rationing. The remainder of the e.coli pollution inside the tanks is, by implication directly caused by pollution in the pipes.

d. Pollution from household behaviour

Lastly, it is well established that lack of hand washing and other unhygienic household behaviour can adversely affect water quality at point-of-use (Jensen *et al.,* 2002). Compared to water pollution at the tap, e.coli incidence increases towards the drinking cup. The average change in e.coli incidence within the household is 24.1 percentage points from the storage container to the drinking cup with very little variation between treatment and control areas (see Table B.4 in Appendix B.2). In other words, at least a quarter of all households suffer from pollution caused by their own behaviour.

Overall, this section shows that water pollution is rampant in both treatment and control areas. In the treatment group e.coli incidence averages 35.4 per cent at the point-of-use. By investigating the pollution at different locations along the water chain, more than half of the overall pollution is found to be due to leaking pipes and water rationing. The remainder of e.coli pollution can be directly attributed to household behaviour.

II.5   Conclusion

Lacking access to clean drinking water and improved sanitation is the largest cause of child mortality in the developing world and responsible for a large share of the global disease burden. Increasing the number of people with access to improved water and sanitation is therefore a priority among policy makers. Massive investments in piped infrastructure for water and sewerage are common and are expected to decrease the risk of diarrhoea among beneficiaries. Although the evidence is mixed, a significant impact on health outcomes is rarely identified. According to a vast literature, this is primarily due to unhygienic household behaviour which causes pollution at the point-of-use. Effective methods on how to sustainably alter behaviour have not yet been identified.

This study quantifies the health impacts from a large scale water and sanitation project in urban Yemen. Health outcomes include diarrhoea among children and adults, and several health related factors, including school and work-place attendance. By exploiting differences in the roll out of project components, the impact for water and sanitation can be analysed separately.

Using a range of quasi-experimental methods on survey data from treatment and control towns, we find that the overall health impact of the infrastructure investment is mixed, at best. In the mountain town of Amran, health has deteriorated for households connected to the water scheme. The existence of piped sewerage has no significant health effects. For the coastal town of Zabid, no clear effects are found for piped water supply. Additional access to sewers seems to marginally improve the water- borne health burden.

To explain these results, microbiological water tests were conducted on several points between the wells (water source) and the drinking cups within a sample of households (point-of-use). Water pollution is extremely high in treatment and control areas. The average incidence of e.coli at the point-of-use is 35.4 per cent for treatment households, while the water source is found to be clean. When dividing the pollution between piped scheme and household behaviour, more than half of the total pollution is found to come from leaking pipes and water rationing. The remainder of e.coli pollution can be attributed to household behaviour. These results are likely to apply to water and sanitation projects in many urban settings characterized by water scarcity and fast population growth in the Middle East, North Africa, and elsewhere in the developing world.

Five policy implications emerge from this study. First, water networks should only be extended if reliability of supply can be assured, because otherwise they can pose serious health risks. Thus in severely water-stressed regions such as many countries in the Middle East and North Africa, such projects must be preceded by water policy changes that assure that water supply for human consumption can be assured at sufficient quantities (which typically implies reallocation from often heavily subsidized irrigation use). Second, providing piped sewers without adequate and reliable water access can worsen community health. Third, frequent water quality tests along piped networks are needed to monitor water quality. Fourth, purification at household level could address water quality concerns. Fifth, training to improve water handling at household level has huge potential, as it accounts for nearly half of the pollution at point-of-use. The last two implications require more investigation about the feasibility and design of such interventions, where rigorous impact evaluations could again play an important role.

Providing safe water supply is most challenging in locations with scarce water resources. This chapter has shown that simply replicating existing methods and technologies is not enough to achieve the desired health impacts in such settings. Future research might also want to try a chlorination program for vendors of truck water, which appears to be a market-based solution available in any urban area with insufficient piped water. Additional research is also needed to test the long-term effectiveness of different interventions on hygiene practices and water handling at household level. Here, experimental approaches are likely to be useful to test a range of possible interventions and their relative merits.

Chapter III: Determinants of drinking water treatment and hygiene habits in provincial towns in Yemen

Single-authored work, Johannes Rieckmann[41]

Abstract

Development projects focusing mainly on the supply side of infrastructure repeatedly turn out to yield poor impact when being rigorously evaluated. This is also the case for an intervention connecting urban households in Yemen to piped water and improved sewerage networks. This study investigates the determinants of drinking water handling and hygiene behaviour. It aims at helping to improve retroactively outcomes, and to avoid pitfalls in the design of future projects. I use multivariate regression to identify the drivers of drinking water treatment and four hygiene habit measures. Connection of households is one of those drivers; however not the most influential one. Conducive water handling and hygiene behaviour appear to be responsive especially to training, access to information and communication technology (ICT), and school education. This chapter contributes to the literature by a case study showing the importance of demand side aspects of infrastructure provision. Pipe and sewer grid construction must be flanked with enhancing point-of-use maintenance – or restoration – of drinking water safety. Future impact evaluations of programmes promoting good water handling and hygiene practices will be particularly useful when intervention assignments can be randomized, and baseline surveys provided for.

Keywords: ICT, Hygiene, Rigorous Impact Evaluation, Sewerage, Training, Urban, Water Handling, Water Supply, Yemen

JEL classification: D19, I10, I38, Q53

[41] Chair of Economic Theory and Development Economics, Georg-August-University Göttingen, Platz der Göttinger Sieben 3, 37073 Göttingen, Germany, email: johannes.rieckmann@wiwi.uni-goettingen.de

III.1 Introduction

Development cooperation projects focusing mainly on the supply side of water and sanitation infrastructure repeatedly turn out to yield limited to poor impact when being rigorously evaluated. Zwane and Kremer (2007), for example, study the limited effect of community-level rural water infrastructure on diarrheal diseases. The World Bank (2008) indicates the prevalent absence of noteworthy "health gains for water treatment at the source". The intended impact on beneficiaries is often either not achieved at all, or diluted. In spite of considerable allocation of financial and human resources during planning and implementation, the benefits often seem to vanish unaccountably.

In order to fathom the underlying reasons and cope with this challenge, economists consider behavioural aspects in their research for several years. Waddington and Snilstveit (2009) emphasize that "interventions are embedded in social systems that have a strong bearing on their uptake and impact in the real world". Such social systems comprise belief and value systems, socio-economic factors, experience and behaviour. While infrastructure project designers typically consider sustainability aspects of supply[42] during planning, monitoring and when evaluating completed projects, it is a more rare practice additionally to pay attention to behavioural demand side aspects. For water and sanitation interventions, aspects of water handling and hygiene practices within the treatment beneficiary households are such demand side aspects of particular concern.

This applies also to an intervention connecting households in provincial towns in Yemen to piped water supply and improved[43] sewerage networks (see Klasen *et al.*, 2011, for a detailed impact evaluation report). The impact on health not only falls short of ex-ante expectations. Klasen *et al.* (2012) – see also the previous chapter – estimate the intervention even to be detrimental for a large share of the beneficiary households. Only part of this change for the worse seems to be rooted in

---

[42] Donors today typically take into consideration malversation of financial resources as a possible cause of project inefficiency (see, for example, Brett, 2003, and Ebrahim, 2003). However, medium- and long-term technical aspects do not always receive adequate attention. Conceptualizing piped drinking water networks in water-scarce locations, for example, requires taking into account expected population growth due to demography and migration; as well as groundwater depletion and replenishment, and competing usages (*e.g.* for agriculture and industrial application). A lack of groundwater supply, for instance, might necessitate temporary rationing and partial disconnect of the piped network in order to maintain operational water pressure. This, in turn, may induce deterioration of water quality on its way to the household due to intrusion of wastewater into underused pipes through couplings and leaks; and growth of biofilm on their inner surface (see Barry and Hughes, 2008, and Flemming, 2009). Furthermore such intermittent drinking water supply requires households to either stock water in storage tanks filled during times of supply, or acquire water from potentially unregulated providers as truck water vendors. For a more detailed study of the effect of water rationing and permeable network pipes, and water storage and handling at household level, on drinking water pollution at the point of use see Lechtenfeld (2012).

[43] The term improved sewerage is used for sewer pipes transporting wastewater and faeces away from households to a communal wastewater treatment plant. This system is widely regarded to be preferable to traditional systems as open canals, open or covered cesspits, or septic tanks in vicinity of the house.

supply-side factors as intermittent water provision; and bacteriological contamination in the feed pipes occurring already before these reach the households. Water quality tests conducted (*ibid.*) reveal pollution with e.coli germs increasing between point of entry and point of use in at least one out of four households. Intra-household (and thus demand side) factors hamper the potential intervention impact. Lechtenfeld (2012) finds that particularly water storage and handling practices as well as personal hygiene habits have a share in worsening health outcomes.

The line of argument motivating the study at hand is straightforward: aspects of welfare and development as income, education and general wellbeing are fostered by good health. Health, in turn, is fostered by safe drinking water handling and good hygiene practices. These behavioural facets are subject to drivers on environmental, household and individual level. Identifying and quantifying these allows targeted policy designing.[44] The literature establishing the relevance of clean drinking water and hygienic sanitation is extensive, revealing its impact on health; and the dire societal consequences of diseases caused by polluted drinking water and unhygienic sanitation.

The mechanism through which water handling and hygiene practices affect the health of household members works directly: these practices affect occurrence and intensity of exposure to infectious waste and waterborne pathogenic germs. Waddington and Snilstveit (2009) show an illustration of the transmission routes of faecal-oral contamination through "fingers, flies, fields, food, and unclean waters", along which germs are transported, proliferate and cause diarrhoea, dysentery and other water-related diseases after entering the body. It is widely recognised that contamination of drinking water by contact with hands contaminated with faeces adversely affects its quality at point of use independently from pollution at the source (see, *e.g.*, Jensen *et al.*, 2002). Trevett *et al.* (2005) show that distinct "evidence of disease transmission from re-contaminated drinking water exists"; and particularly link water storage and handling with incidence of diarrhoea.

The relevance of diseases related to drinking water and insanitation for human development can hardly be overrated. Rosen and Vincent (1999) report that "poor water supply, sanitation and hygiene" account for 10.7 per cent[45] of mortality and 10.1 per cent of disability-adjusted life years (DALY)[46] lost in the preceding decades. They state that nearly all of these deaths and approximately 85 per cent of the loss in quality and time of life are caused by diarrhoeal diseases, the overwhelming

---

[44] It also is a prerequisite for (re-)establishing the effectiveness of the evaluated Yemenite intervention.

[45] The numbers reported refer to Africa and shall serve as indication of the relevance and impact of diarrhoeal diseases, rather than allow direct conclusions about disease incidence and consequences in the Middle East.

[46] Disability-adjusted life years are a measure developed by the World Bank and the World Health Organization (Murray, 1994) in order to be able to compare the burden of different diseases. It takes into account the constraints an affected person is subject to during daily life, *i.e.* the severity of the disease.

majority of the affected being children.[47] Walker *et al.* (2013) estimate that diarrhoea caused 700,000 fatalities in 2011, with 72 per cent of these concerning children less than two years of age. Berkman *et al.* (2002) deem diarrhoeal diseases occurring in early childhood to impede significantly the development of cognitive abilities, which influences educational attainment and productivity. They cause direct cost of medical care (see for example Patel *et al.*, 2013, for the case of Indian slums) and indirect cost by foregone income due to DALY lost (see Lange *et al.*, 2012, for the case of South Africa). Diarrhoeal diseases decrease furthermore general quality of life and well-being (*e.g.*, see Prüss-Üstün and Corvalán, 2006).

Down-to-earth protective measures suitable to limit the risk of such diseases are implementable in Yemen. Households have to rely on water storage of some kind in absence of continuous on-demand supply with drinking water.[48] In arid urban settings, this is in most cases a roof- or courtyard-sited water tank of considerable capacity.[49] Otherwise, households rely on smaller plastic jerry cans, open buckets or traditional clay jugs. Besides some common-sense precautions regarding the storage of the water (*i.e.*, routine cleaning of the tanks, use of sealing lids, keeping containers and tanks out of reach of children and animals, and cooling[50]), it is of importance to additionally treat it before drinking. In order to assure the potability of the water, it can be dealt with in several ways. Neutralization of potential contamination with bacteria from the particularly dangerous e.coli[51] family, can for instance be achieved by chlorination, filtration or boiling of the water.[52] Hand washing with soap as well as water treatment reduces incidence and severity of diarrhoea considerably. The toilet being in a hygienic state decreases the risk of contamination of hands with faeces. There is "overwhelming evidence that hand washing, sanitation, and household and point-of-use water treatment improve health outcomes" (World Bank, 2008). Ejemot-Nwadiaro *et al.* (2012) find that promotion of hand washing reduces diarrhoea incidence in children by 32 per cent in low- or middle-

---

[47] While the World Health Organization observes a distinct decline of child diarrhoeal mortality in 2003 compared to 1990 "from 159 to 70 deaths per 1000 live births", it estimates that still 21 per cent of deaths of children younger than five years are caused by diarrhoeal diseases in developing countries (Kosek *et al.*, 2003). Diarrhoea continues to be one of the leading causes of child death; with now unimproved mortality rates between 2005 and 2010 (see Santosham *et al.*, 2010).

[48] Such continuous on-demand supply is absent when households procure water from truck water vendors, haul it from a well by donkey cart tanks or handheld containers or have to bridge temporal disruptions of piped water supply.

[49] In Yemen, this capacity typically ranges between two and three cubic meters.

[50] Most storage tanks are steel roof tanks; and thus directly exposed to sunlight during most of the day.

[51] Germs from the family of *Escherichia coli* are responsible for annually "at least 120 million cases" (Feil, 2012) of bloody diarrhoea (dysentery), with their pathovar *Shigella* alone causing about 1.1 million fatalities (60 per cent of which are children under five years of age) in developing countries (Niyogi, 2005); and provoke severe cramps. Presence of e.coli in water is a sign of recent contact with traces of human or animal faeces.

[52] See also the technical notes in Appendix C.1 for further details on water treatment methods.

income countries. By reducing the presence of bacteria of potential faecal origin more effectively[53] than hand washing using water without additives, the application of soap decreases the exposure of the human immune system to precarious germs. The soap improves the mechanical removal effect of the water and adds a chemical germ-killer capacity.

External validity is most likely. Yemen is one of the MENA (Middle East and North Africa) countries suffering from high water stress,[54] displaying a high rate of population growth,[55] high inequality,[56] and low education rates.[57] It is severely affected by the political unrests and social upheavals associated with the "Arab Spring"[58] which by today has affected more than a dozen countries perceptibly. I assume that the set of influences shaping intra-household behaviour is similar to that in many other countries in the Arab language area, African countries adjacent to the Sahara desert, and arid Central Asia. Such similarity increases the external validity of the findings and positions the chapter as potential input for influencing development cooperation policy in the mentioned regions.

The main contribution of this chapter to the body of literature is the minuteness of the analysis regarding direction and size of influence of a set of household characteristics on several behavioural outcomes in the MENA region. Based on the findings I derive recommendations regarding potential toeholds for influencing and coaching household behaviour. The main findings refer to determinants

---

[53] Burton *et al.* (2011) observe in England a reduction of 21 percentage points using water alone and 36 percentage points using off-the-shelf soap (special antibacterial soap is yet more effective, but may not always be commercially available in developing countries). Cairncross *et al.* (2010) in their extensive meta-analysis estimate the reduction of risk to suffer from diarrhoea to reach 48 per cent. Luby *et al.* (2006) report a prevalence of diarrhoea 51 per cent lower in Pakistani neighbourhoods where hand washing with soap is promoted, compared to the control group. Aiello *et al.* (2008) find in a meta-study drawing on publications from 1960 to 2007 that improved hand hygiene reduces gastrointestinal illness by 31 per cent, the most effective improvement being "hand hygiene education with use of nonantibacterial soap".

[54] The country faces "formidable freshwater management challenges" (Haidera *et al.*, 2011) and a groundwater overdraft of twice the rate of recharge by rainfall (Taher *et al.*, 2012) – with some aquifers supplying urban population agglomerations depleting even faster.

[55] Figures differ between several official sources. According to the Central Intelligence Agency of the United States of America (2013) Yemen ranks place 30 out of 232 countries considered, with an annual average population rate of 2.5 per cent. The United Nations estimate 3.02 per cent (2012). The World Bank (2013a) estimates 3.06 per cent, corresponding to rank eleven out of 245. In urban areas the rate is even higher at on average 4.78 per cent (United Nations, 2012), which corresponds to a doubling of the urban population within less than 15 years. Zeug and Eckert (2010) estimate the annual population growth rate for the capital Sana'a to even have reached 7.3 per cent in 2007. The fast surge of the urban population aggravates the under-supply with clean drinking water.

[56] The Yemenite population is characterized by high inequality with a Gini coefficient of 0.377 (World Bank, 2005).

[57] The World Bank World Bank (2013b) indicates an average 3.7 years of schooling.

[58] The "Arab Spring" movement got under way in late 2010. In Yemen, associated demonstrations gained momentum by mid of January 2011, thus placing the Yemenite society among the first to climb on the bandwagon of – mostly – civil disobedience and protest against the powers. The process of reshaping allocation of political power and institutions is on-going.

assessable in the medium term; which thus are relevant for policy design. *Drinking Water Treatment* is positively correlated with hygiene training, connection to piped water and to improved sewerage, exposure and access to ICT, and formal education. Training, connection to piped water and ICT seem to be distinctly conducive to the bundle of *Hygiene Habit* regressands.

I structure the remainder of this chapter is as follows: Section III.2 reviews relevant literature and derives hypotheses to be tested. Section III.3 provides brief overview of the programme background and data. Section III.4 introduces the empirical strategy and methods employed. Section III.5 presents the empirical results. Section III.6 concludes with a general discussion of the findings.

III.2 Literature review and hypotheses on determinants of water treatment and hygiene practices

The relevant literature lists an array of potential determinants of drinking water treatment, hand washing and other hygiene habits. Based on these and own first-hand observations regarding the circumstances in Yemen, I develop several hypotheses. These relate to determinants which firstly influence the likelihood of a Yemenite provincial household treating its drinking water before consumption, and secondly the hygiene behaviour exercised in daily life at home.

In the following section, I derive the expected direction of effects for these determinants, along with its respective transmission channels. Both *Drinking Water Treatment* and *Hygiene Habits* are deemed to be influenced by characteristics of the household as a whole (hypotheses 1 to 4) and the head of the household in particular (hypothesis 5) as itemised below. I indicate *Drinking Water Treatment* by a single binary variable, while I capture *Hygiene Habits* by four different dependent variables.[59] The rationale for this structure is the separation of ingestion-related from environment-related factors. Often – but not always – I expect the coefficient of the respective household to have the same sign for the dependent variable *Drinking Water Treatment* on one hand and all four alternative dependent variables indicating *Hygiene Habits* on the other hand. I expect the correlation coefficients of these latter variables to be consistent in sign, independent of which one I examine. The estimated sizes might be different, though. The hypotheses identified by character *a)* bear on *Drinking Water Treatment*, while those identified by character *b)* relate to *Hygiene Habits*.

---

[59] Hygiene habits are measured by the reported practices and resource allocation linked to personal hygiene and health-relevant aspects of housekeeping. The dependent variables capturing hygiene habits are: *Use of Cleanser* for and washing, *Spending on Soap*, *Spending on Cleanser* understood as a combination of soap and detergent, and *Frequency of Latrine-Cleaning*. These are described in detail in the data section of this chapter.

As the intervention in Yemen centres on *infrastructural factors*, these are of high interest for this study. Such factors, as connection to piped drinking water and improved sewerage, are frequently indicated in the literature to play a role. Schmidt *et al.* (2009) list water access as determinant of hygienic behaviour in Kenya, Devine (2010) goes a step further and suggests that "convenient access" to water and soap is a key factor. Sugita (2004) finds that in Uganda the amount of water available per day and capita is a more important factor shaping hand washing behaviour than other factors.

I expect a household to see no particular necessity to look further after drinking water that it receives via an improved pipe network system. As communal treatment plants chlorinate the water before feeding it into the system, households with continuous piped water supply should have less reason to worry about its potability than those that buy their water from a vendor. What is not perceived to be necessary tends not to be done; so I assume households connected to the piped water network to have a lower[60] probability of treating their drinking water frequently than non-connected households. I therefore derive on the role of piped water **Hypothesis 1a:** *connecting a household to piped water <u>decreases</u> its likelihood of treating its drinking water before consumption.*

Connection to piped water should reduce the effort – while not necessarily the expenditures – of procurement of water needed for hand washing and cleaning chores. The increased volume of water conveniently available at home reduces the need for parsimony. I expect a higher average volume of water to be disposable within the household for cleaning of bathrooms and kitchens, and for taking measures of personal hygiene. While I do not expect a particularly strong effect here, I state **Hypothesis 1b:** *connecting a household to piped water <u>increases</u> its likelihood of displaying hygiene habits.*

I expect the effect which connection to improved sewerage (conditional on connection to piped water) has on the likelihood of treating drinking water to have the same sign as mere connection to piped water. Connection to yet another element of improved infrastructure should further foster the general feeling of improved health safety; and thus reduce the efforts undertaken by the household to take basic precautions. Anyway, as sewerage is located "behind" consumption, the link to drinking water quality before consumption is not as obvious as that of water supply. Therefore, I expect the effect to be smaller than that of connection to piped water from the former section. I state **Hypothesis 2a:** *additional connection of a household to improved sewerage (i.e., on top of connection*

---

[60] If not mentioned otherwise, the comparisons in the hypotheses are "ceteris paribus", and I assume all other determinants to remain unchanged.

to piped water) decreases its likelihood of treating its drinking water before consumption, but to a lesser extent than connection to piped water.

I assume the same mechanism to be at work as described in Hypothesis 2a when it comes to hygiene habits. I expect the perception of reduced health hazard coming along with the improvement of infrastructure to reduce the efforts undertaken by household members to keep the bathroom clean; and to consistently maintain hygiene routines.[61] Therefore I state **Hypothesis 2b:** *additional connection of a household to improved sewerage decreases its likelihood of displaying hygiene habits, but to a lesser extent than connection to piped water.* Note that I expect the role of improved sewerage to be similar for water treatment, but to be converse for hygiene habits.

Hygiene training and awareness campaigns are consistently associated with favourable behavioural change. Curtis *et al.* (2011) state that "promotion of safe hygiene is the single most cost-effective means of preventing infectious disease" with a focus on hand washing and safe stool disposal being especially beneficial, and commends to promote hand washing and hygiene "at least as aggressively as vaccination". Luoto *et al.* (2011) estimate that the use of "persuasive social marketing messages that harness findings from behavioural economics" increase occurrence of water treatment,[62] while stating that sustainability of behavioural change may depend on repeated exposure.

I assume that exposure to hygiene trainings – as conducted by various governmental and non-governmental entities in Yemen – increases awareness about the link of contaminated water with water-related diseases, as well as knowledge about potential sources of water contamination within the household; and about feasible precautionary measures. I therefore state **Hypothesis 3a:** *those households in which at least one member participated in any type of hygiene training in the past have a higher likelihood of treating their drinking water before consumption.* In line with the reasoning Hypothesis 3a is based on, I assume enhanced awareness and background knowledge to motivate household members to develop and maintain hygiene habits. Thus I state **Hypothesis 3b:** *those households in which at least one member participated in any type of hygiene training in the past have a higher likelihood of displaying hygiene habits.*

---

[61] The latter comprise hand washing following, *e.g.*, each emiction or defecation, washing infants and toddlers, and before preparing and eating food.

[62] The latter authors refer to Kenya. The studies are in line with a multitude of others: for example, Parker *et al.* (2006) show that training in household water chlorination as well as in six-step hand washing procedures lead to promising levels of sustainability in learned behaviour in rural Kenya. Galiani *et al.* (2012) support this by showing that a Peruvian campaign embedding schools increases the awareness of the population regarding the role of hand washing and soap use, and leads to application that is more frequent. Chase and Do (2012) find in a Vietnamese setting that such campaigns have the intended direction of effect, while large-scale campaigns still face challenges in terms of the size of the effect. Pengpid and Peltzer (2012) report hygiene campaigns addressing schoolchildren to be effective in African countries.

Exposure to information and communication technology – such as mobile phones and particularly mass media like television, radio broadcasting, the World Wide Web – may have an impact on water treatment and hygiene habits displayed by household members due to role model effects and access to information. The evidence is mixed so far. Galiani *et al.* (2012) indicate that a mass media and communications campaign on community level[63] has no effect on knowledge and behaviour concerning hand washing. In contrast to that, Schmidt *et al.* (2009) find that both exposure to and ownership of media are linked to soap use.

I assume that households that have access to radio or television broadcasting, the World Wide Web, or telecommunication devices are better informed about water-related diseases and feasible precautionary measures of water handling than households that are more isolated. Awareness campaigns undertaken by governmental and non-governmental entities probably address them more effectively. The household members can more easily gather information on their own initiative; and exchange information about best practises with more other households. On the role of ICT, I state **Hypothesis 4a:** *those households with exposure to information and communication technology have a <u>higher</u> likelihood of treating their drinking water before consumption.* Following the same line of argumentation I further state **Hypothesis 4b:** *those households with exposure to information and communication technology have a <u>higher</u> likelihood of displaying hygiene habits.*

Various other *household characteristics* are listed in the literature to be determinants. Aunger *et al.* (2010) mention the "habit of hand-washing at particular junctures during the day"[64] to constitute a significant predictor of hand-washing behaviour. The financial resources a household can dispose of may represent an economic constraint, which together with perception of impracticality of safe household practices can prevent households from using these practices. In Tanzania this is the case even when mothers are aware of the role of these practises in mitigating health risks (see Badowski *et al.*, 2011). Begum *et al.* (2011) identify three features of adoption behaviour[65] concerning improved water and sewerage. These are namely wealth (the poor have a lower probability of benefiting from improved drinking water supply and sewerage), education (displaying a threshold effect with secondary or higher education increasing the probability), and household size (lowering the probability). The presence of children and perception of diseases as severe both increase

---

[63] The study refers to a campaign in provincial Peru.

[64] The authors refer to the case of Kenya. In a Yemenite context the daily Islamic prayer times may represent such junctures due to the ritual washing (*Wudu'*), but it has to be pointed out that no soap is used in this ritual.

[65] Note that in the context of this study in Yemen, households have no choice whether to be connected to improved piped water or improved sewerage. Still, one can reasonably argue that the adoption behaviour studied by Begum *et al.* (2011) for the case of Bangladesh shows similar characteristic traits as adoption behaviour of intra-household drinking water treatment.

compliance with hygiene guidelines (see Zomer *et al.*, 2013). Totouom *et al.* (2012) study the factors in Cameroon which determine if a household opts to treat its drinking water. They state that household level of education has a positive effect on the probability of water treatment. The same is reported about wealth, illness history (increasing the probability due to heightened risk-aversion) and the number of children younger than five years of age living in the household (with a positive effect on the probability due to increased sensitivity regarding water-related health issues). These characteristics on household level captured during the interviews have a conjoint (*i.e.*, on all or at least most of the household members) effect.

This is why I control for household composition, wealth and illness history as well as awareness regarding water-related illnesses. I assume that households with a large proportion of needy members are managed by adults who tend to be more cautious regarding water-related health issues than those in households where more members are self-reliant. Where several young children or elderly adults live, the occurrence of diarrhoeal diseases generates a direr situation than where household members are endowed with a more robust physical health. I expect households with a higher number of members who have to be looked after – *i.e.*, children and the elderly – by other members have a higher likelihood of treating their drinking water before consumption, and of displaying hygiene habits.

I further assume that wealthier households tend to be those which are populated by more educated adult members, which should influence their awareness about precautionary measures regarding health and water safety. Severe (water-related) diseases probably have been affecting them less, because they took these precautionary measures more often. Furthermore, they dispose of more economic resources providing them with additional options as, *e.g.*, acquisition of water filtration systems. I expect that wealthier households will have a higher likelihood of treating their drinking water before consumption and of displaying hygiene habits. The understanding is that supplies acquired with additional available economic resources refer to soap, laundry detergent and household cleaning agents rather than hardware here.

Third, I assume that in a household that was exposed to water-related diseases within the recall period of four weeks before the interview household members[66] take precautionary measures

---

[66] I here additionally assume that those members who are tasked with household chores of water procurement and storage know about the link of contaminated drinking water with these diseases.

regarding water safety. (Note that the opposite relationship is conceivable.[67]) A burnt child dreads the fire, but the effect might last for a limited time only when it suggests taking rather bothersome additional measures without immediate observable gain. Consistently, adults who experienced water-related diseases might be more cautious also regarding hygiene habits than others who have been luckier. I expect that households in which at least one member suffered from water-related diseases in the recent past have a higher likelihood of treating their drinking water before consumption, and displaying hygiene habits. (Again, I could reverse the argument.[68])

Individual *characteristics of the household head* affect the probability of drinking water treatment and hygiene habits. The relevant literature provides mixed evidence regarding the role played by gender of household headship, while age and education[69] seem to have a positive effect. Tan Jr. and Capuno (2012) estimate the effect of the mother or father holding at least a high school degree on probability of drinking water treatment to be positive, the age of the mother having a positive effect, and a positive effect for the gender of the households head being male. Sattar *et al.* (2007) show that in Pakistan "the education level of female decision-makers compared to that of male decision-makers has more significant effect in using any […] method of purification". They argue that women are more prone to adopt water purification practices "because females are in general more intensively involved in the food related household activities". Totouom *et al.* (2012) on the other hand indicate that male household headship increases the probability of drinking water treatment, but point out that this is in contradiction with other studies. Begum *et al.* (2011) find that the gender of the household head is not significantly correlated with adoption behaviour concerning improved water and sewerage.

I assume that over the period of formal education – in school, vocational training, and university – knowledge is taken up on links of water contamination with water-related diseases, safe water handling, and hygiene behaviour. This knowledge partially translates into formation of habits and implementation of best practices. Based on this, I state **Hypothesis 5a:** *the more educated the head of the household is the <u>higher</u> is the likelihood of the household treating its drinking water before*

---

[67] Of course, it might be the case that an opposing relationship is at play here as well: recent symptom occurrence might reflect habitual disregard of precautionary measures, in contrast to the former hypothesis reflecting a long-term effect.

[68] Habitual disregard of precautionary measures might have contributed to the occurrence of symptoms, and persist.

[69] Both, duration and level of education appear to play a fostering role. Sugita (2004) finds that duration of education increases the probability of drinking water treatment, together with awareness about diarrheal risk factors and attitudes regarding hand washing. Schmidt *et al.* (2009) identify the level of education to be important.

consumption. Again, the reasoning for this hypothesis is the same as for the next. I consistently state **Hypothesis 5b:** *the more educated the head of the household is the <u>higher</u> is the likelihood of the household members displaying hygiene habits.*

In Yemen mainly the women look after needy household members, and spend more time at home than their husbands. I therefore assume that female household heads tend to be more aware of health issues among the members; and can better safeguard adequate hygienic and water handling behaviour. As previous literature hints towards its influential role, I control for gender. I expect households with female headship to have a higher likelihood of treating their drinking water before consumption, and of displaying hygiene habits.

The additional treatment of drinking water following its procurement is neither common nor traditional in Yemen. Regarding the role of age, I therefore argue opposed to the literature mentioned above, and control for it in the regressions. I assume that those cohorts with more recent exposure to formal education have taken up habitual water treatment with higher probability. Promotion of best practices probably influenced their formation of opinion and habits within the previous three decades. I further assume hygiene habits to have been internalised more intensely by the younger generation. I expect the head of the household being younger increases the likelihood of treating the drinking water before consumption, and of displaying hygiene habits*.*

The study on hand tests the aforementioned hypotheses, investigating the conjectured determinants of the probability of drinking water treatment and habitual exercise of hygiene practises. I empirically assess – first for water treatment, then for the bundle of four dependent variables available to proxy hygiene habits – each hypothesis, using Yemenite household survey data. The empirical analysis reveals evidence supporting some of these hypotheses. Others I have to reject; for a few of them, I do not find insightful evidence.

III.3   Programme background and data

While housing one of the oldest civilizations on earth, the Republic of Yemen is a young state. The country had been separated into the Yemen Arab Republic (called North Yemen) and the People's Democratic Republic of Yemen (called South Yemen). Its reunification into the Republic of Yemen in its current borders became effectual in 1990. While infrastructure in the whole country is developable compared to other countries located on the Arab peninsula, the North is lagging behind

the South for historical reasons.[70] One of the committed bilateral donors with whom the current Yemenite government cooperates is the Federal Republic of Germany, represented by its Ministry of Economic Cooperation and Development (BMZ).[71] Besides basic education, the main foci of the development cooperation are drinking water supply and wastewater disposal. In the year 1989 the Provincial Towns Program (PTOP) was initiated in eight Yemenite towns, all of which are located in the area of the former North Yemen.[72] In these locations, existing piped water and sewerage networks – including water works and wastewater treatment plants – were rehabilitated, extended or fundamentally constructed.

The German financial contribution was transacted by the development banking branch of the *Kreditanstalt für Wiederaufbau* (KfW), which subsequently commissioned a rigorous impact evaluation of two sample projects of PTOP in 2008. The data that this study is based on stem from this evaluation (see also the previous chapter and Klasen et al., 2011, for further details). KfW and the evaluation team of the University of Göttingen jointly selected two out of the eight provincial towns.[73] In order to capture contingent systematic differences between topographic regions, one project town – Amran – was chosen from the central mountainous region, the other one – Zabid – from the western coastal plain. The researchers identified suitable control towns located over the same water aquifer as the respective project town and in spatial vicinity (no more than 20 kilometres away)[74] based on topography, population size and socio-economic similarity. Further selection criteria are the existence of baseline data and variance of water availability within the survey town. The latter provides the opportunity to construct in-town control groups as additional

---

[70] From the retreat of the Ottoman Empire in 1918 to the death of Imam Ahmad bin Yahya in 1962 the North was ruled in form of an autocratic imamate. Technological innovation stagnated for ideological reasons, and this part of the country became largely isolated from the international scene. Followed by the Northern Yemen Civil War and the revolution that was its result, the North became the more secular Yemen Arab Republic. It commenced to cooperate closely with its main ally Kingdom of Saudi Arabia. The Federal Republic of Germany recognized the Yemen Arab Republic as independent state right away in 1962 when the revolution began. It has been maintaining development cooperation since about 44 years. Around the same time, the Aden Emergency initiated the end of the British colonial rule in the South. The socialist state of South Yemen emerged in late 1970, quickly building close ties to the German Democratic Republic, the People's Republic of China, and the Soviet Union.

[71] The relevant development cooperation endeavours which this study is referring to are identified by BMZ reference numbers 1989 66 160, 1998 66 112, 2001 65 787, and 2002 65 165.

[72] These towns comprise besides Amran (located in the mountainous part of the country) and Zabid (located in the coastal plain *"Tihama"*) the urban agglomerations of Al Mansuriyya, Al Mukha, Bait al Faqih, Bajil, Hajja, and Yarim.

[73] For a detailed description of the Provincial Town Programme and especially the impact evaluation see Klasen *et al.* (2011).

[74] For the mountainous project town Amran the control town is Raydah, for the coastal project town Zabid it is Al Jarrahi.

counterfactuals[75] besides the control towns. For the mountainous region, the control town is Raydah; for the coastal plain it is Al Jarrahi. Figure C.1 in C.7 depicts the locations where the survey yielding the data for this study was conducted.

For an illustration of the technical scheme of water supply from well to point of use refer to Figure II.1 in Chapter II.2.2. Where water supply is intermittent – which is the case in the mountainous and to far lesser extent in the coastal project town[76] – steel storage tanks of average filling capacities ranging between two and three cubic metres are present in literally every affected household. In the control towns without piped water, nearly every household relies on such a storage tank; and periodically purchases drinking water from tanker trucks.[77] In times of availability of water, they fill the tank. The water gets pumped up[78] from street level – either fed from the piped water network, or from a water truck – into the storage tank. From there it typically runs through an intra-household pipe system to a kitchen water tap. Having cooled down during the night, the water usually is filled in the morning into a container holding up to 20 litres. Here it is retained for purpose of drinking and meal preparation during the day. These containers are commonly wide-necked pitchers made of porous clay to benefit from the evaporation chill either, or enclosed plastic jerry cans that ideally are equipped with spigots. Several household members often consecutively share the mugs into which they fill the water for drinking.

The offside location of the storage tanks, combined with the default mounting of a sealing lid, makes contamination of the stored drinking water by household members or animals unlikely. Still, contamination of the water elsewhere within the household can occur due to unsafe water handling practices in combination with presence of germs due to a lack of hygiene. Critical junctures are the process of filling the water from the tap into the kitchen storage container, or directly into food; and from the kitchen storage container into the drinking mug or food. Germs adhering to hands, worktops, rags and inner surfaces of bowls, kettles *etc.* may enter the water and proliferate.

---

[75] In-town control groups are used in the main impact evaluation. In the study at hand they are used for descriptive statistics, but employment regarding the analysis is abstained from on the grounds of econometric sample size requirements. Subsample sizes are too small to render meaningful estimation results for the dependent variables of choice.

[76] In the coastal project town water supply is more reliable than in the mountainous area because ground water depletion is not as severe, and population growth due to demographics and migration is more moderate.

[77] Traditional water fetching from wells in smaller containers like buckets and jerry cans plays much less of a role in terms of frequency and water volume acquired. It leads to the same phenomenon in the household: drinking water is stored for some time before consumption.

[78] The storage tank is mostly located on the rooftop in order to be independent of electricity. Power blackouts are commonplace in Yemenite towns, during which diesel pumps would have to be used for distribution of the water within the household. Mounting the tank aloft allows exploiting gravity instead, a principle familiar from water towers located on high ground. Few households mount the storage tank in the courtyard.

A comprehensive questionnaire-based[79] household survey, conducted in both treatment and both control towns in 2009, is the main data acquisition component[80] of the impact evaluation. Sampling was randomized, based on satellite image mapping with identification marking of rooftops. The team divided each town into square-shaped clusters. In order to cover all neighbourhoods, all of these clusters entered the sampling frame. From each cluster, a sub-sample was drawn using a random starting point and constant house-roof selection intervals. Pre-formulated consistent selection rules and replacement procedures applied. This was a precaution in case enumerators encountered more than one household in a single building, the house was not a residential building, or the enumerators could conduct no interview for other reasons.[81] Table III.1 below displays the detailed composition of the sample of 2403 households used[82] in this study, by connection status and location.

Table III.1: Household sample, by region and connection status

Region	Connection status	Households	Percentage (local)	Percentage (global)
Mountainous	Water	199	17.61	8.28
	Sanitation	269	23.81	11.19
	Control	662	58.58	27.55
	Subtotal	1130	100.00	47.02
Coastal	Water	127	9.98	5.29
	Sanitation	714	56.09	29.71
	Control	432	33.94	17.98
	Subtotal	1273	100.00	52.98
Total		2403		100.00

Self-selection into the treatment – *i.e.*, connection to piped water and additional connection[83] to improved sewerage – is not likely. The reason is that the network was constructed starting from the water works[84] with large feed pipes leading into the inner town, then fanning out into smaller distribution pipes, and then streetwise into household supply pipes. The network was systematically

---

[79] The questionnaire used in the household survey is available in English language in the appendices of Klasen et al. 2011.

[80] The main household survey was supplemented by interviews based on short questionnaires conducted with commercial water truck well owners, water truck drivers, a subsample of households visited for water quality tests, pollution data from water quality tests, secondary data on water-related diseases collected from health facilities, school attendance and educational attainment data from education facilities, and secondary census and survey data from the Yemenite Central Statistical Organization (CSO). The chapter at hand resorts entirely to data from the main household survey.

[81] Most residential houses in the four provincial towns are inhabited by only one household. Interview refusal rates are close to zero and negligible.

[82] The survey covered 2518 households. The sample used in this study is reduced by 115 households to avoid missing observations.

[83] Connection to improved sewerage is conditional on connection to the piped water network.

[84] The water works chlorinate the drinking water extracted from five (mountains) respectively three (coastal plain) source wells at water treatment plants before feeding it into the distribution pipe network.

extended from the inner town outwards, following the streets and hampered only by particular rocky areas where the digging of ditches – which partially was done manually due to an employment-creation scheme – was particularly difficult. If a household in the evaluation sample is located in a street that today is connected to the grid, and was located at the same place at the time of the treatment,[85] then it de facto could not opt out of the treatment. Therefore, this study benefits from a natural experiment setup.

To measure water handling and hygiene habits, I use five dependent variables. For an overview of mean outcomes by connection status, see Table C.2 in Appendix C.3. *Drinking Water Treatment* is a binary indicator variable taking the value 1 if a household subjects its drinking water to any kind of disinfecting treatment before consumption, and 0 otherwise. Self-reporting on hygienic conditions, cleanliness and related habits is prone to be subject to reporting bias. This is a special case of the *Hawthorne effect* (cf. Wickström and Bendix, 2000).[86] I therefore use four alternative measures in order to compose a more robust picture as close to reality as possible with the data at hand.

Use of Cleanser for Hand Washing is a binary indicator variable taking the value 1 if a household uses cleanser – this can be soap, laundry detergent as an alternative for soap, or a combination of these[87] – for hand washing, and 0 otherwise. I deem the variable to indicate habitual hygiene better than simple reporting of hand washing, as almost every respondent – those answering falsely probably doing so craving for admiration or out of embarrassment – states that household members wash hands. *Soap Spending* is a continuous variable that gives the logarithmised expenditure per capita in Yemenite rial (YER) for soap, in a typical[88] month. The variable is logarithmised in order to approximate its distribution to a normal distribution. It is intended to render an alternative proxy for

---

[85] Very few new houses were constructed after the treatment, apart from those in the outskirts of the towns. The reason is found in the high building density in the organically evolved old centres. Another possibility of self-selecting into the treatment group would be moving into existing houses (and replacing other households).

[86] The respondent is aware of the thoughtfulness and possible judgement of the interviewer; and possibly wishes to comply with what she thinks the wishes of the researchers are. This would be a manifestation of the Hawthorne effect, which is driven by behavioural change of the observed due to the observation. There is little reason to assume the related *John Henry* effect (Saretsky, 1972) to be at work, as the latter is concerned with behavioural change of the control group only, which might be motivated to outperform – or report to do so – the treatment group. The questionnaire design does not stimulate the respondent in any way to compete with other respondents belonging to households with a different connection status.

[87] Cleanser is defined in this study to be a combination of soap and laundry detergent. In Yemen as elsewhere in the Middle East and North Africa it is not unusual to replace soap with laundry detergent for hand washing. For this reason I consider both.

[88] Note that the Islamic month of fasting, *Ramadan*, around which consumption patterns vary from the rest of the year, is not a typical month. The survey and questionnaires are designed considering that.

the level of hygiene within a household and is more finely gradated[89] then a binary variable. I drop observations[90] with an initial value larger than 500 YER (approximate 2.33 United States Dollars[91]) to avoid outliers which are suspected to report business-related expenditures, *e.g.* for laundry cleaner firms operating in the same house as the household is located in. *Cleanser Spending* is the corresponding logarithmised continuous variable for the combined expenditures of soap and laundry detergent. It is introduced serving as a robustness check. *Latrine-Cleaning Frequency* is a continuous variable indicating how many times per week the latrine of a household is reportedly cleaned. Like the two expenditure variables, it serves as a proxy for the level of hygiene maintained in a household. I conceive the variable as a proxy for general cleanliness efforts of the household. Its informative value might be somewhat restricted, as a positive reporting bias is likely. My assumption is that this reporting bias is not systematically different from household to household. Most households report to clean once or several times a week, some report to do so up to twice a day. Very few households report either never to clean or to do it more often than twice a day.

The main explanatory variables of interest indicate the connection status of a given household regarding piped drinking water, and additional connection to improved sewerage. I am particularly interested in the role of these variables as potential determinants of behaviour because the financial, organizational and technical input to the infrastructure programme is one of the main donor contributions in the field of public health in Yemen. A cost-benefit analysis needs to take into consideration direct as well as indirect effects of connection of households. It is an important question if an extensive intervention like the one at hand has a bearing on behavioural issues regarding handling of drinking water and other hygiene-related practices. *Piped Water* is a binary indicator variable taking the value 1 if a household is connected to the piped water network, and 0 otherwise. *Sewerage* is the corresponding binary indicator variable regarding additional connection to improved sewerage.

I include other covariates in the analysis to control for characteristics of households as a whole, household heads as influential individuals, location, and media exposure. I try to employ housing characteristics as instruments, but these turn out to be of limited suitability.[92] The choice of this set of control variables is motivated by the review of existing literature, my hypotheses regarding

---

[89] Note that I do not assume a linear relationship between spending and the level of hygiene exercised within a household. Diminishing marginal returns appear likely.

[90] Approximately the 1.6 per cent highest amounts are excluded for spending on soap, and 1.45 per cent for the combination of soap and laundry detergent.)

[91] Information on the currency exchange rate stems from Bartram *et al.* (2005).

[92] For the purpose of documentation (and possible future extension using better instruments) I still document the approaches tested and its findings in Appendices C.4 and C.6.

possible determinants of water treatment and hygiene habits, and data availability. I cover characteristics of the household head by incorporating the *Age*, *Gender* and *Marital Status* as well as alternative measures of *Education* (level achieved, duration, and literacy). Household characteristics include alternative measures of composition (*Dependency Ratio*,[93] *Number of Household Members*, *Number of Children*, and *Number of Children and Elderly*), the *Mean Duration of Education* of adult members, water-related *Disease Awareness*, *Occurrence of Disease Symptoms* within a recall period of thirty days, and exposure to *Hygiene Training* in the past. I include a proxy for household wealth to control for unobserved intra-household infrastructure and hygiene practices. For this purpose, I use an *Asset Index* based on building material (roof, walls, and windows), ownership of the house, of a motor vehicle, and of particularly valuable electronic assets. It is calculated for the mountainous and the coastal region separately to account for regional differences. For details see Klasen *et al.* (2011). As an alternative to the asset index, I use the *Building Material* of the outer walls of the house.[94] I also control for presence of a *Water Storage Tank*, as a specific item of intra-household water supply hardware. *Location* effects are controlled for by including binary location indicator variables on region or town level. I control for *Exposure to ICT* and mass media including several alternative or supplementary variables (possession of a television set, personal computer, satellite dish, radio broadcast receiver, portable or landline phone, and access to the World Wide Web). Housing characteristics include the *Distance* of the house from the historic centre of the town, its reported *Age* and an indicator variable denoting whether it rests upon shapeable or *Rocky* subgrade. For a detailed description of all covariates, see Table C.1 in Appendix C.2.

III.4 Methodology and empirical strategy

I estimate the roles that the conceivable determinants play for the likelihood that a household resorts to a) *Treatment of Drinking Water* before consumption and to b) *Use of Cleanser* for hand washing using Probit, and four different instrumental variable estimation procedures, respectively. The reason for this wide approach lies in the nature of the data. The dependent variables as well as the main explanatory variables are binary, which necessitates the employment of several estimators to narrow down the results when trying to cope with potential endogeneity.[95] The three remaining continuous dependent variables scrutinized in this study – reported *Spending on Soap* or *Cleanser*,

---

[93] The *Dependency Ratio* is defined as the relation of household members unable to contribute to household income due to their age (enumerator) to those in working age (denominator), regardless of actual employment status. The number of household members aged below 15 or above 60 is divided by the number of household members aged between 15 and 60.

[94] Estimation results for specifications including *Building Material* as covariate and alternative to *Asset Index* are not included in the results tables due to space limitations. They are available on request.

[95] For further details refer to Appendix C.4.

and the reported *Frequency of Latrine-Cleaning* – are regressed on the covariates using simpler methods. The basic regression model is based on Ordinary Least Squares (OLS). I apply the Two-Stage Least Squares (2SLS) estimator to control for endogeneity issues.

Endogeneity[96] regarding the main explanatory variable cannot be ruled out ex ante. Coping with it by instrumenting[97] the main explanatory variable requires methods which account for the fact that the two dependent variables as well as the explanatory variables to be instrumented are all binary. Reverse causality is not probable for either of the dependent variables, as households were connected based on their location within certain streets. Measurement error on the other hand might be possible due to reporting bias regarding explanatory variables (*e.g.*, falsely stating compliance with best hygiene practices).[98]

I use the same instrumental variables as Klasen *et al.* (2012, see Section II.3.2). The respective – potentially endogenous – explanatory variable indicating the connection (either to piped water only, or additionally to improved sewerage) status is instrumented using three variables. These are 1) the distance of the house the household resides in from the centre of the town in metres[99] (*IV Distance*), 2) the age[100] of the house (*IV Age of House*), and 3) a binary variable indicating whether the house is located on rocky ground[101] (*IV Rocky Ground*). I test the chosen instruments regarding relevance and validity for each dependent variable. To test for relevance I compare the Cragg-Donald Wald F-statistic to the appropriate critical value, taking into account the number of instrumented variables, of instruments, and the "desired maximal size (r) of a 5% Wald test" (refer to table 5.2 in Stock and

---

[96] Endogeneity is present in case the error term correlates with one or several of the covariates. The presence of endogeneity would make the reliable estimation of the influence of the various conceived determinants a difficult matter. It might arise when the dependent variable influences one or severely explanatory variables (reverse causality), due to measurement error or omitted variables. Omitted variables would have to be correlated with both the dependent as well as at least one explanatory variable in order to cause endogeneity. While there are no hints pointing towards an increased probability of either of three issues, none can be ruled out upfront. This study is not concerned with time series analysis, therefore the fourth possible cause of endogeneity – autoregression with autocorrelated errors – is not an issue.

[97] The matter can be addressed by instrumenting the covariate suspected to be endogenous. The instrumental variable or variables chosen must fulfil both the criterion of relevance (*i.e.*, actually have a non-negligible correlation with the covariate) and that of exogeneity (it or they must not correlate with the error term). The latter point can be read as the requirement that the instrumental variable may have an influence on the dependent variable only indirectly – through its effect on the possibly endogenous covariate – but not directly, controlled for the other variables in the model.

[98] Omitted variable bias cannot fully be excluded.

[99] A larger distance to the centre is expected to decrease the probability of a household to be connected to the pipe network, as the networks extend from the centres outwards.

[100] Older houses are usually located in the historic centres of the town, where the networks extend from outwards.

[101] Because the water and sewerage pipes are usually led along the streets subterraneous, and constructing ditches was often done without heavy machinery, rocky areas are assumed to have a lower probability of being covered by the pipe network.

Yogo, 2005). To rest the assumption of exogeneity of the instruments beyond a pure argumentative line of defence, the Hansen's J statistic is calculated. I display details concerning these calculations in Appendix C.4. While it turns out that I can be confident regarding the validity of the instruments, I cannot confidently show that the exogeneity assumption is fulfilled based on statistical tests. I therefore rely first and foremost on the basic Probit regressions. On basis of logical reasoning it is difficult to conceive of how the instrumental variables could not be endogenous. For purpose of documentation and facilitation of improving the analysis in case better instruments can be found, I provide further detail on the respective IV estimations (see Appendix C.4) and their results (see Appendix C.6). Still, those latter results have to be regarded with caution.

III.5 Results

I structure all sub-sections of this section in a way helping the reader keeping track of the various dependent variables and tests. To this end, I briefly recap my expectations. Then, at a time, I first show descriptives, then present the analysis including robustness checks, and third discuss the findings.

Connection to piped water and improved sewerage I expect reducing the diligence exercised when handling drinking water. Exposure to hygiene training or awareness campaigns should increase the probability of drinking water treatment. I expect the same direction of effect for wealth, education, number of children, and experience with water-related diseases, female headship, and age of the household head. The role of ICT and media exposure is unclear ex ante, while I tend towards assuming a positive effect. I do not form any expectation regarding the role of location, or marital status of the household head. The same pattern applies for all of the dependent variables intended to map hygiene habits other than probability of drinking water treatment. The expected sign of connection to piped water constitutes the single exception.

III.5.1 Drinking water treatment

Households in the Yemenite project towns tend not to treat their water in any way before drinking. In the mountainous region, only 16 per cent report to do so, while in the coastal plain, hardly anybody does (less than three per cent, see Table III.2 below for further breakdown according to connection status). The underlying reason for the latter phenomenon might be that literally every household in the coastal project town is connected to piped water, the supply of which is in addition far less intermittent than in the mountain project town. Due to these circumstances water storage tanks are less prevalent, and trust in the quality of piped water might reduce the perceived need to treat the drinking water at home. Still, this cannot explain why drinking water treatment is so rare also in the coastal control town, where no piped water is provided. Only 221 out of 2406 households

in the sample that I use for this part of the analysis report to treat water. Respondents report an array of methods; approximate relative frequencies are given in parentheses. These households filter (60%) or boil (28%) the water, let it stand and the contained particulate matter settle (7%), stain it through a piece of cloth (4%), add chlorine or bleach (0.5%), disinfect it by exposure of a transparent plastic container to sunlight or apply yet another method. It is eye-catching that the technically down-to-earth and cost-efficient disinfection method of chlorination is hardly used at household level. A possible reason for this is the unpleasant effect on taste when overdosing, but no information suitable to investigate this matter further is available in the data.

Table III.2: Drinking water treatment, relative frequencies by location and connection status

Connection	Water Treatment	Mountain Project	Mountain Control	Total	Coastal Project	Coastal Control	Total
None	Yes	4.90%	8.08%	5.74%	0.00%	2.55%	0.86%
	No	39.00%	91.92%	52.87%	0.00%	97.45%	33.07%
Piped Water	Yes	4.43%	0.00%	3.27%	0.24%	0.00%	0.16%
	No	19.38%	0.00%	14.30%	14.86%	0.00%	9.82%
Sewerage	Yes	9.93%	0.00%	7.33%	2.73%	0.00%	1.81%
	No	22.37%	0.00%	16.50%	82.16%	0.00%	54.28%
	Total	100.00%	100.00%	100.00%	100.00%	100.00%	100.00%
	N	836	297	1133	841	432	1273

Note: no households are connected to piped water or improved sewerage in the control towns. All households in the sample are connected at least to piped water in the coastal project town.

Eight major factors seem to determine the probability of a household in the sample treating its drinking water in any way before drinking. While the estimated size of the effects slightly varies across different specifications, the levels of statistical significance remain largely unchanged. The same holds for the relative order in terms of coefficient size.

Specifications (1) to (6)[102] in Table III.3 below provide an overview, opposing the two covariates of main interest – *i.e.*, connection to *Piped Water* on the one hand and additional connection to *Improved Sewerage* on the other – and varying measures of education and location. I exhibit estimated average marginal effects. Complementary specifications are displayed in Table C.9 to Table C.12 in the results appendix; now split by main explanatory variables of interest (piped water only, and additional connection to sewerage).

---

[102] Rather than choosing a single specification as the preferred one, I peg out the range of coefficients of the respective covariates examining a larger array of specifications. I do this in order to triangulate the coefficient size as accurately as possible. When itemising the coefficient ranges in the text, I take into consideration also the specifications presented in the appendix.

Table III.3: Probability of drinking water treatment, connections compared, selected specifications

Specification	(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)	(6)
Estimator	Probit	Probit	Probit	Probit	Probit	Probit
Piped Water	0.054***	0.033**	0.060***	0.040***	0.061***	0.041***
	(0.012)	(0.015)	(0.013)	(0.015)	(0.014)	(0.015)
Sewerage		0.036**		0.042***		0.042***
		(0.015)		(0.015)		(0.015)
HH Member trained	0.102***	0.096***	0.105***	0.099***	0.106***	0.100***
	(0.020)	(0.020)	(0.021)	(0.021)	(0.021)	(0.021)
Web Access	0.069**	0.066**	0.073**	0.068**	0.073**	0.068**
	(0.033)	(0.033)	(0.033)	(0.034)	(0.033)	(0.033)
Primary Edu	0.044***	0.044***	0.043***	0.044***		
	(0.014)	(0.014)	(0.014)	(0.014)		
Intermediate Edu	0.010	0.008	0.010	0.009		
	(0.023)	(0.022)	(0.022)	(0.022)		
Secondary Edu	0.045**	0.044**	0.050***	0.049***		
	(0.018)	(0.018)	(0.018)	(0.018)		
Tertiary Edu	0.043**	0.042**	0.047**	0.047**		
	(0.021)	(0.020)	(0.021)	(0.021)		
Edu. Durat° HH Head					0.003***	0.003***
					(0.001)	(0.001)
Age HH Head	-0.000	-0.000	-0.000	-0.000	0.000	0.000
	(0.000)	(0.000)	(0.000)	(0.000)	(0.000)	(0.000)
Gender HH Head	-0.044*	-0.042*	-0.047*	-0.045*	-0.042*	-0.040*
	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.024)
Marital Status HH Head	0.012	0.010	0.011	0.009	0.017	0.015
	(0.021)	(0.021)	(0.020)	(0.021)	(0.021)	(0.021)
Disease Awareness	0.006	0.006	0.006	0.006	0.004	0.004
	(0.011)	(0.011)	(0.011)	(0.011)	(0.011)	(0.011)
Asset Index	0.039***	0.038***	0.037***	0.036***	0.038***	0.038***
	(0.007)	(0.007)	(0.007)	(0.007)	(0.007)	(0.007)
Dependency Ratio	-0.000	0.004	-0.006	-0.002	-0.010	-0.006
	(0.027)	(0.028)	(0.027)	(0.027)	(0.027)	(0.027)
Water Tank present	-0.021	-0.020	-0.026	-0.026	-0.027	-0.027
	(0.019)	(0.019)	(0.018)	(0.018)	(0.018)	(0.018)
Region	0.154***	0.161***				
	(0.016)	(0.017)				
Mountain Treatment			0.035**	0.027	0.036**	0.027
			(0.016)	(0.017)	(0.016)	(0.017)
Coastal Treatment			-0.149***	-0.168***	-0.152***	-0.172***
			(0.024)	(0.025)	(0.024)	(0.025)
Coastal Control			-0.071***	-0.074***	-0.074***	-0.077***
			(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.024)
Sample Size	2459	2459	2459	2459	2459	2459
Pseudo R²	0.175	0.179	0.186	0.191	0.181	0.186

Average marginal effects displayed. Robust standard errors in parentheses. Levels of statistical significance: * $p<0.10$, ** $p<0.05$, *** $p<0.01$

For reasons of space limitation I respectively portion the tables into specifications varying ICT exposure variables on the one hand, and introduce location variables as well as alternative estimation methods on the other hand. The alternative estimators are intended to control for endogeneity, and second stages are displayed. The results of these latter specifications (see Table C.11 and Table C.12) as well as results of first stages (see Table C.29) are displayed in Appendix C.6. The coefficients of determination of the models range from 17 to 19 per cent.

The most influential covariates in terms of coefficient size are those indicating the location of the household. The household being located in the mountainous area[103] appears to increase the probability of treating its drinking water before consumption by 15 to 16 per cent, compared to location in the coastal plain. Other explanatory variables with the same positive sign of coefficients – always statistically significant at conventional levels, if not mentioned otherwise – include, roughly in descending order of absolute coefficient size (in all specifications): previous participation of any household member in a *Hygiene Training* (with an estimated effect size of about ten per cent),[104] and connection either to *Piped Water* only (5 to 6%) or additionally to *Improved Sewerage* (3 to 4%). Exposure to information and communication technology constitutes itself in varying correlation coefficient sizes, depending on which measure is included in the specification. I measure *ICT exposure* using seven alternative variables.[105]

The most influential of these seems to be access to the World Wide Web. Correlation coefficients indicate marginal effect sizes ranging from about three (radio receiver) to seven per cent (web access). The level of *Education* of the household head appears to be an influential determinant as well, with a non-linear course. Compared to the reference category "no education", I estimate completed primary education to increase the probability of treatment of drinking water by four to five per cent. Intermediate education comes with no statistical significance at conventional levels, while the effects of completed secondary and tertiary education each equal that of primary education. I estimate wealth, proxied by the *Asset Index*, to have a marginal effect size of three to four per cent. The *Gender* of the household head being male, in contrast, seems to decrease the probability by four to five per cent.

---

[103] Interestingly, when including the variable Sewerage on top of Piped Water, the coefficient of the categorical variable indicating location in the mountain treatment town (reference category is mountain control town) changes its level of statistical significance from the 95-percent level to below 90-percent level.

[104] Marginal effects indicated in parentheses are approximate values. Numbers slightly vary over specifications, mostly only at the third decimal place.

[105] These seven ICT variables are: presence of a *Television Set*, a *Personal Computer*, a *Satellite Dish* antenna (these three do not seem to play a role), a *Radio Receiver*, a *Cell Phone*; connection to a telephone *Landline*, and to the *World Wide Web*.

The estimated coefficients of some explanatory variables – ex ante conceived to have a measurable effect – turn out to lack any statistical significance at conventional levels. *Age* and *Marital Status* of the household head seem to have no influence on the probability of water treatment. The same is true for the respondent knowing about causal relationships of any symptoms of water-related diseases with water quality, sewerage and hygienic conditions (*Disease Awareness*). Likewise, the illness history of household members reflected by *Symptom Occurrence* during the last month before the interview does not appear to be a determinant. The same is true for the *Dependency Ratio*[106] and presence of a *Water Storage Tank*. Interacting *Gender* and *Level of Education* of the household head did not yield any effect.

To test for robustness of results I use different specifications changing variables and estimation procedures. I use varying measures of exposure to ICT, alternative location variables, household composition and education measures, and wealth proxies. Furthermore, I exclude – one at a time – selected variables (*e.g.* using either *Disease Awareness* or *Symptom Occurrence*). The estimations are robust over all specifications for most[107] of the explanatory variables regarding levels of statistical significance, direction of sign and relative coefficient size. Within estimation procedures, also the absolute coefficient sizes remain stable.

Besides 1) *Probit* regressions I also employ 2) *2SPrB* (a two-stage Probit bootstrap, see Appendix C.4 for details on this and the following estimators), 3) *RSUR BP* (a recursive version of SUR BP), 4) *IV-Probit*, and 5) *W2SLS* (a specific two-stage procedure proposed by Wooldridge 2010) to control for endogeneity. All of these display levels of statistical significance and coefficient signs[108] mostly consistent with all of the basic Probit models for most of the explanatory and control variables. This hints toward the absence of a noteworthy endogeneity bias, but it has to be kept in mind that due to the doubts raised above regarding the fulfilment of the exogeneity condition, these findings are circumstantial evidence at best.

It turns out that some, but not all of the hypotheses can be corroborated. Strong evidence is found that *Hypothesis 3a* (those households in which at least one member participated in any type of

---

[106] The *Dependency Ratio* is statistically significant mainly in specifications without location variables.

[107] There are two exceptions. The level of statistical significance of the variable *Gender of Household Head* drops below the ten per cent convention in a few of the specifications. Presence of a *Water Storage Tank* features coefficients statistically significant at conventional levels only when using the IV-Probit or W2SLS estimator, in each of the cases with a negative sign.

[108] Relative coefficient sizes within the IV models do not always reflect those of the Probit model. Some variables seem to gain prediction power on cost of others. The most important covariates in terms of effect size keep their position, though. Absolute coefficient sizes may differ from the marginal effects estimated with the Probit model.

hygiene training in the past have a higher likelihood of treating their drinking water) cannot be rejected. Mixed evidence is won regarding *Hypothesis 4a* (those households with exposure to information and communication technology have a higher likelihood of treating their drinking water). While reception of radio broadcasting, use of telecommunication and web access appear to have the expected effects, television seems to be of no importance. This is a surprising subtlety. *Hypothesis 5a* (the more educated the head of the household is, the higher is the likelihood of the household treating its drinking water) receives consistent support.

In contrast to that, neither can *Hypothesis 1a* (connecting a household to piped water decreases its likelihood of treating its drinking water before consumption) nor *Hypothesis 2a* (additional connection of a household to improved sewerage decreases its likelihood of treating its drinking water before consumption, but to a lesser extent than connection to piped water) be sustained. Instead, connected households display a higher propensity to opt for water treatment than the control group. Additional connection to sewerage is positively correlated like connection piped water only, with an effect by comparison about one third smaller. Neither for the household composition nor for the illness history control variables I find results supporting or contradicting the findings of previous literature. The same applies to the role of the age of the household head.

The findings regarding the control variables indicating wealth and female headship are in line with the previous literature, indicating a positive correlation with the likelihood of drinking water treatment.

III.5.2 Use of cleanser for hand washing

Almost 60 per cent of the households located in the mountainous region report to use cleanser for hand washing, and more than 80 per cent do so in the coastal plain (see Table III.4).

Table III.4: Use of cleanser for hand washing, relative frequencies by location and connection group

Connection	Cleanser	Mountain Project	Mountain Control	Total	Coastal Project	Coastal Control	Total
None	Yes	22.97%	51.85%	30.54%	0.00%	75.93%	25.77%
	No	20.93%	48.15%	28.07%	0.00%	24.07%	8.17%
Piped Water	Yes	15.79%	0.00%	11.65%	11.41%	0.00%	7.54%
	No	8.01%	0.00%	5.91%	3.69%	0.00%	2.44%
Sewerage	Yes	23.21%	0.00%	17.12%	72.89%	0.00%	48.15%
	No	9.09%	0.00%	6.71%	12.01%	0.00%	7.93%
	Total	100.00%	100.00%	100.00%	100.00%	100.00%	100.00%
	N	836	297	1133	841	432	1273

Note: no households are connected to piped water or improved sewerage in the control towns. All households in the sample are connected in the coastal project town.

The percentage of compliers (*i.e.*, households that use cleanser) is larger than that of non-compliers in all four towns and three connection status groups (not connected, piped water only, combination of piped water with improved sewerage). It has to be noted that this might partly reflect a positive reporting bias as discussed in the data section. This potential bias is assumed to be non-systematic, *i.e.* not dependent on town or connection status.

Ten major factors seem to determine the probability of a household head in the sample using cleanser when washing hands. I identify nine explanatory variables or groups of variables which are positively correlated with the probability of using cleanser; and one which is negatively correlated.

Keeping the structure of covariates consistent with the overview table presented for the former dependent variable, I oppose the two covariates of main interest in specifications (1) to (6) in Table III.5 below. Estimated marginal effects are indicated in parentheses as approximate percentage change of probability of use of cleanser.

Table C.13 to Table C.16 in Appendix C.6 display the estimated marginal effects for complementary specifications. As above, the tables are split by main explanatory variables of interest; and specifications vary media exposure, location, education and household composition variables. Again, for reasons of space limitation alternative specifications and estimators (see Table C.15 and Table C.16) as well as results of first stages (see Table C.29) are presented in the same appendix. The coefficient of determination of the models ranges from eight to eleven per cent.

The mentioned variables comprise, approximately in descending order of absolute coefficient size: location in the *Coastal Control* (20 to 21 per cent over reference location *Mountain Control*) or *Project* (18 to 19%) *Town*, connection to the *Piped Water* network (10 to 12%), the *Level of Education* of the household head (in contrast to before though no longer for *Primary Education*, with eight to nine per cent for *Secondary Education* over reference category "*No Education*", and *Tertiary* with nine to ten per cent), participation of a household member in a *Hygiene Training* (9 to 10 %), *Exposure to ICT*[109] (4 to 9%), additional connection to the *Improved Sewerage* network (5%, statistically less significant than *Piped Water*), *Disease Awareness* (4%), *Symptom Occurrence* (3%) and *Assets* as a proxy for wealth (3 to 4%).

---

[109] In contrast to before, presence of a television set is now statistically significant at the ten per cent level, presence of a satellite dish even at the one per cent level. Interestingly, web access is no longer significant at conventional levels. I observe the strongest effect for landline phone connection.

Table III.5: Probability of cleanser use, connections compared, selected specifications

Specification	(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)	(6)
Estimator	Probit	Probit	Probit	Probit	Probit	Probit
Piped Water	0.100***	0.078***	0.124***	0.101***	0.118***	0.096***
	(0.018)	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.027)	(0.024)	(0.027)
Sewerage		0.037		0.049*		0.048*
		(0.027)		(0.027)		(0.027)
HH Member trained	0.092*	0.087*	0.093*	0.087*	0.090*	0.084*
	(0.050)	(0.050)	(0.050)	(0.050)	(0.049)	(0.049)
Web Access	0.031	0.028	0.032	0.029	0.027	0.023
	(0.084)	(0.084)	(0.083)	(0.083)	(0.083)	(0.083)
Primary Edu	-0.006	-0.007	-0.005	-0.006		
	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.024)		
Intermediate Edu	0.051	0.048	0.054	0.052		
	(0.039)	(0.039)	(0.039)	(0.039)		
Secondary Edu	0.081***	0.078***	0.084***	0.082***		
	(0.028)	(0.028)	(0.028)	(0.028)		
Tertiary Edu	0.095***	0.093***	0.099***	0.097***		
	(0.032)	(0.032)	(0.031)	(0.031)		
Edu. Durat° HH Head					0.009***	0.009***
					(0.002)	(0.002)
Age HH Head	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.001	0.001
	(0.001)	(0.001)	(0.001)	(0.001)	(0.001)	(0.001)
Gender HH Head	0.002	0.004	-0.001	0.001	-0.016	-0.014
	(0.046)	(0.046)	(0.046)	(0.046)	(0.046)	(0.046)
Marital Status HH Head	-0.001	-0.002	0.000	-0.002	-0.001	-0.003
	(0.040)	(0.040)	(0.040)	(0.040)	(0.040)	(0.040)
Disease Awareness	0.042**	0.042**	0.042**	0.042**	0.039**	0.039**
	(0.018)	(0.018)	(0.017)	(0.017)	(0.017)	(0.017)
Asset Index	0.044***	0.043***	0.043***	0.042***	0.041***	0.040***
	(0.013)	(0.013)	(0.013)	(0.013)	(0.013)	(0.013)
Dependency Ratio	-0.193***	-0.188***	-0.197***	-0.191***	-0.204***	-0.198***
	(0.041)	(0.041)	(0.041)	(0.041)	(0.041)	(0.041)
Water Tank present	0.017	0.016	0.012	0.009	0.009	0.007
	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.024)
Region	-0.183***	-0.177***				
	(0.020)	(0.020)				
Mountain Treatment			0.003	-0.004	0.004	-0.003
			(0.027)	(0.027)	(0.027)	(0.027)
Coastal Treatment			0.154***	0.134***	0.152***	0.132***
			(0.035)	(0.037)	(0.035)	(0.037)
Coastal Control			0.214***	0.210***	0.214***	0.210***
			(0.031)	(0.031)	(0.031)	(0.031)
Sample Size	2466	2466	2466	2466	2466	2466
Pseudo R²	0.088	0.088	0.089	0.090	0.092	0.093

Average marginal effects displayed. Robust standard errors in parentheses. Levels of statistical significance: * $p<0.10$, ** $p<0.05$, *** $p<0.01$

Opposing these nine factors is one which is negatively correlated with the probability of using cleaner. An increase of the *Dependency Ratio* by one appears to reduce the probability by up to one fifth (-15 to -20%).

It comes somewhat unexpected that certain factors do not seem to have any influence. These include the presence of a *Water Storage Tank*, or *Primary Education* of the household head – remember I above show both of the latter to be correlated with treatment of drinking water. The same is true for personal characteristics of the household head as *Age*, and *Marital Status*.

It is noteworthy that in contrast to my former dependent variable – probability of treatment of drinking water before consumption – the probability of cleanser use does not appear to be correlated with the *Gender* of the household head.

I check for robustness of the results by estimating different specifications. The estimations are robust over all specifications for almost all of the explanatory variables regarding levels of statistical significance, direction of sign and relative coefficient size. In addition, over different specifications, the absolute coefficient sizes remain stable. Apart from two instrumental variable specifications, in which the location variable coefficient switches sign,[110] there is only one group of variables that requires a closer look. Varying measures of exposure to ICT sheds light on heterogeneous intensities of correlation with cleanser use. While the coefficients of presence of a *Landline, Cell phone,* a *Satellite Dish* or *Radio Receiver* come with statistical significance at the five per cent level or higher, access to the *World Wide Web* does not seem to play any role. Possession of a *Television Set* of a household is correlated with the probability of use of cleanser stronger and at a higher level of statistical significance when the household has more members[111] than others. One possible explanation is that this finding might reflect the effect of a larger audience (*i.e.*, the television set might be powered during more time of the day, and the household head pick up more information). When the household is connected to *Improved Sewerage* presence of a *Satellite Dish* is significant at the one per cent level, and thus at a higher level than those connected to piped water only (5%).

As before, all of the estimators employed[112] to control for endogeneity display levels of statistical significance and coefficient signs mostly consistent with all of the basic Probit models for most of the

---

[110] Refer to Kennedy (2005) for a thorough discussion of possible causes of "wrong" signs of estimated coefficients. As the switching of sign occurs only twice, I regard the matter not to be overly concerning.
[111] This is respectively reflected by the following household composition variables: number of children, number of children and elderly, and total number of household members.
[112] The same four instrumental variable estimators are used as for the dependent variable *Probability of drinking water treatment*: *2SPrB, RSUR BP, IV-Probit,* and *W2SLS.*

explanatory and control variables. As mentioned before in context with the first dependent variable, the Sargan-Hansen test indicates that the instruments do not fulfil the exogeneity condition. Therefore the results of these estimators are of limited informative value.

Deliberating the findings on the probability of cleanser use as a dependent variable, I come to the conclusion that none of my hypotheses – here listed in order of estimated effect sizes of their respective variables – can be rejected. Hypothesis 1b (connecting a household to piped water increases its likelihood of displaying hygiene habits) appears to be correct. So does Hypothesis 5b (the more educated the head of the household is the higher is the likelihood of the household members displaying hygiene habits), for secondary and tertiary education. Also Hypothesis 2b (additional connection of a household to improved sewerage decreases its likelihood of displaying hygiene habits, but to a lesser extent than connection to piped water) seems to reflect reality, including its comparative second component. The same is true for Hypothesis 3b (those households in which at least one member participated in any type of hygiene training in the past have a higher likelihood of displaying hygiene habits). So does Hypothesis 4b (those households with exposure to information and communication technology have a higher likelihood of displaying hygiene habits), while web access and the variable TV and/or PC present constitute the exceptions: they are never statistically significant. Regarding control variables, the picture is mixed. The coefficient of wealth and disease awareness have the expected sign, while larger households in contrast to my expectation seem to have a lower probability to use cleanser than smaller ones. Neither recent symptom occurrence, nor age or gender of the household head seems to play a role.

As an additional approach to establish robustness of the findings; and to increase confidence that the probability of cleanser use is indeed a good proxy for hygiene habits, I regress three alternative continuous dependent variables on the covariates: *Spending on Soap*, *Spending on Cleanser*, and *Frequency of Latrine-cleaning.* The findings are largely[113] consistent with those of the present section. I describe this in detail in Appendix C.6. The mentionable exceptions are that *Improved Sewerage* is not statistically significant for the dependent variable *Spending on Soap*; and both connection types are not statistically significant for the dependent variable *Spending on Cleanser*. In contrast to *Piped Water*, *Improved Sewerage* is not statistically significant for the dependent *Variable Latrine Cleaning Frequency*. The variable *Hygiene Training* is not statistically significant at conventional levels for the dependent variable *Spending on Soap*, but for all four other dependent variables, including *Spending on Cleanser*.

---

[113] The variable hygiene training is not statistically significant at conventional levels for the dependent variable spending on soap, but for all four other dependent variables, including spending on cleanser.

III.6   Conclusion

The purpose of this chapter is to identify the determinants of water treatment and hygiene habits in households in Yemenite provincial towns. I do this by empirically analysing micro-level data collected during a large-scale household survey; and summarize the main findings as follows.

The probability of *Drinking Water Treatment* is positively correlated with location of the household in the mountainous region, hygiene training experience, connection to piped water, additional connection to improved sewerage, ICT exposure, and wealth, completed primary, secondary and tertiary education. The gender of the household head being male, and the household being located in the coastal plain – especially in the project town, is negatively correlated.

I use four different measures to map *Hygiene Habits*, *i.e.* the reported practices and resource allocation on household level linked to personal hygiene and health-relevant aspects of housekeeping. The measures are not chosen as stand-alone signifiers of hygiene habits, but are intended to allow composing a more comprehensive and detailed picture of determinants of habitual hygiene behaviour. The analysis reveals that connection to piped water is a more important driver than that to improved sewerage. Participation in hygiene training is among the most strongly correlated covariates. Wealth and recent affection foster hygiene habits. The same I can say about ICT, while I have to challenge the idea that the underlying mechanism is entirely rooted in better access to information. In the following, the four outcome variables are crisply covered one by one.

First, the probability of *Use of Cleanser* for hand washing appears to be fostered by location in the coastal region, connection to piped water, level of education, hygiene training experience, connection to improved sewerage, ICT exposure, disease awareness, recent illness history and wealth. The dependency ratio is negatively correlated. Second, *Spending on Soap* is positively correlated with ICT exposure, location in the mountainous region, and connection to piped water, use of a water storage tank, wealth and recent illness history. Location in one of the coastal towns and age of the household head are negatively correlated with spending. Third, *Spending on Cleanser* (including laundry detergent) seems to be increased by ICT exposure, hygiene training experience, location in the mountainous region, disease awareness, recent illness history, connection to piped water (only in few of the specifications) and wealth. The dependency ratio, location in one of the coastal towns and age of the household head are negatively correlated. Fourth, the *Frequency of Latrine-Cleaning* appears to be driven by mean education duration of adults, training, the dependency ratio, connection to piped water, wealth, location in the coastal project town, presence of a water storage tank, and education. On the other hand, location in the coastal control town or in the mountainous region is negatively correlated with the frequency.

It requires some thought how the findings of the chapter at hand can be squared with those of the preceding one; and consecutive work by Lechtenfeld (2012). Chapter II carves out that piped water deteriorates health (in the mountainous area) or has so significant effect (in the coastal area); and improved sewerage has no significant (mountainous) to marginally improving (coastal) health effects. We find that incidence of e.coli is high in treatment households, with more than half of it stemming from leaking pipes and rationing; and the remainder from household behaviour. The findings of Lechtenfeld (2012) are in line with this, stating that access to piped water increases the "risk of child diarrhea by 4.6 percentage points"; with the majority of the pollution stemming from "broken pipes and interruptions of water supply", exacerbated by "unhygienic water storage and handling at household level". In Chapter III I now find that connection to piped water and also to improved sewerage are positively correlated with the probability of drinking water treatment and reporting of following hygiene habits. While this seems to contradict the detrimental to at best feeble health impact of connection to piped water found in Chapter II and by Lechtenfeld (2012), three reconciling explanations are conceivable: First, although connected households seem to display a higher probability of treating their drinking water and of displaying hygiene habits, the beneficial effect of this behaviour on health might be overcompensated by the detrimental effect of the connection on health. Second, water treatment at the household level might – although implemented – be ineffective for some reason, possibly faulty practices. It seems less likely to me that poor conduct of hygiene practices might be an issue here, as water treatment is more technical and complicated than body and living quarters hygiene. Third, the behaviour might be an adjustment reaction of connected households realizing that the connection might increase the risk of contamination of the drinking water at point-of-use. All three explanations underline that pollution caused on the supply side is a major concern.

The study at hand faces two noteworthy limitations. First, all data used in the analysis is self-reported information about behavioural aspects regarding various aspects of hygiene. Yemenite female enumerators talking face to face for protracted time to women in the survey households conducted the interviews. The potential concern that reporting could be biased in favour of behaviour deemed by the respondents to meet the expectations of the enumerator cannot entirely be dismissed. Craving for admiration might palliate the picture. Anyway, a good case can be made why not to have to worry too much about this potential bias: there is no reason to believe that it should be systematic in any way, i.e. affecting households in different ways depending on their location, social strata et cetera. Neither did the interviewers report any peculiarities in this regard, nor did searching for patterns in the data reveal anything hinting towards such systematic differences. Second, limited

subsample sizes restrict the explanatory power of the study regarding resource allocation. For instance, data on expenditure on cleanser is available for no more than 118 households[114] when analysing those located in the coastal plain and connected to piped water, but not improved sewerage. Nothing can be done to remedy this difficulty.

As presented in the introduction, Yemen is similar to many MENA countries – and beyond – in terms of topography, hydrography, demography, public health and socio-economic development faced. Admittedly, some of these circumstances are posing challenges of a more complex and urgent nature in Yemen than elsewhere. However, conceptually comparable to the effect of a magnifying glass, due to these intensifying circumstances – increasing the visibility of need for action – the country might so much the better serve as a case study from which lessons can be learned for other countries and societies. Mechanisms at work are presumed to become evident more articulate in the tightened Yemenite setting. External validity can be insinuated inasmuch as those determinants identified in this study to drive behaviour will probably be at work in other locations as well, albeit in varying magnitudes of effect.

Several policy implications suggest themselves. I identify a couple of determinants of hygiene-related behaviour that planners and designers of infrastructure projects in the water and sanitation section can take into account. Furthermore, some of these determinants can be influenced in the medium term in order to achieve more favourable health outcomes of such projects than up to now. Especially flanking and complementing construction of piped water and sewerage from the outset with hygiene training offers and health awareness campaigns networks – either based on multipliers or with blanket coverage – shows promise.

Future research should address two main fields of interest. First, to my knowledge, nobody conducted Randomized Controlled Trial (RCT) or quasi-experimental studies yet in order to establish the optimal level of intensity, resource allocation and mode of conduct regarding hygiene trainings and health awareness campaigns. This knowledge gap should be filled in order to improve integrated development programme planning and cost-benefit ratios. Second, the role of ICT in shaping and influencing perceptions, beliefs and habits regarding water handling practices and personal hygiene should be inspected more closely. In particular, the shifting relevance of different media and devices deserves attention. Gaugeable data and information should be attained on the role of the World

---

[114] This is the lowest subsample size in this study. Data from the section of the questionnaire used to survey data on consumption expenditure is less exhaustive than that from other sections. Part of this is rooted in a certain reluctance demonstrated by many Yemenite households to disclose this particular kind of information.

Wide Web, social media and modern mobile telecommunication devices. Apart from that, the questions analysed in the study at hand should be researched in other geographic regions, with samples of sufficient size to ensure validity of findings for all sub-groups of the surveyed population.

Bibliography

Adelman, Madelaine (2003): The military, militarism, and the militarization of domestic violence. In *Violence Against Women* 9 (9), pp. 1118–1152.

Adkins, Lee C. (2009): An Instrumental Variables Probit Estimator using gretl. In Ignacio Diaz-Emparanza, Petr Mariel, Maria Victoria Esteban (Eds.): Econometrics with gretl. Proceedings of the gretl conference 2009. Bilbao.

Ai, Chunrong; Norton, Edward C. (2003): Interaction terms in logit and probit models. In *Economics Letters* 80 (1), pp. 123–129.

Aiello, Allison E.; Coulborn, Rebecca M.; Perez, Vanessa; Larson, Elaine L. (2008): Effect of hand hygiene on infectious disease risk in the community setting: a meta-analysis. In *American Journal of Public Health* 98 (8), pp. 1372–1381.

Aizer, Anna (2010): The gender wage gap and domestic violence. In *American Economic Review* 100 (4), pp. 1847–1859.

Angrist, Joshua D. (2001): Estimation of limited dependent variable models with dummy endogenous regressors. In *Journal of Business & Economic Statistics* 19 (1), pp. 2–16.

Angrist, Joshua D.; Pischke, Jörn-Steffen (2008): Mostly harmless econometrics: An empiricist's companion. Princeton, NJ: Princeton University Press.

Angrist, Joshua; Krueger, Alan B. (2001): Instrumental variables and the search for identification: From supply and demand to natural experiments. In *Journal of Economic Perspectives* 15 (4), pp. 69–85.

Aunger, Robert; Schmidt, Wolf-Peter; Ranpura, Ashish; Coombes, Yolande; Maina, Peninnah Mukiri; Matiko, Carol Nkatha; Curtis, Valerie (2010): Three kinds of psychological determinants for hand-washing behaviour in Kenya. In *Social Science and Medicine* 70 (3), pp. 383–391.

Badowski, Natalie; Castro, Cynthia M.; Montgomery, Maggie; Pickering, Amy J.; Mamuya, Simon; Davis, Jennifer (2011): Understanding household behavioral risk factors for diarrheal disease in Dar es Salaam: A photovoice community assessment. In *Journal of Environmental and Public Health* 2011.

Barry, Michele; Hughes, James M. (2008): Talking dirty – the politics of clean water and sanitation. In *New England Journal of Medicine* 359 (8), pp. 784–787.

Bartram, Jamie; Lewis, Kristen; Lenton, Roberto; Wright, Albert (2005): Focusing on improved water and sanitation for health. In *The Lancet* 365 (9461), pp. 810–812.

Begum, Sharifa; Ahmed, Mansur; Sen, Binayak (2011): Do Water and Sanitation Interventions Reduce Childhood Diarrhoea? New Evidence from Bangladesh. In *Bangladesh Development Studies* 34 (3), pp. 1–30.

Berkman, Douglas S.; Lescano, Andres G.; Gilman, Robert H.; Lopez, Sonia L.; Black, Maureen M. (2002): Effects of stunting, diarrhoeal disease, and parasitic infection during infancy on cognition in late childhood: a follow-up study. In *The Lancet* 359 (9306), pp. 564–571.

Bernheim, B. Douglas; Garrett, Daniel M.; Maki, Dean M. (2001): Education and saving:: The long-term effects of high school financial curriculum mandates. In *Journal of Public Economics* 80 (3), pp. 435–465.

Black, Robert E.; Morris, Saul S.; Bryce, Jennifer (2003): Where and why are 10 million children dying every year? In *The Lancet* 361 (9376), pp. 2226–2234.

Blattman, Christopher (2009): From Violence to Voting: War and political participation in Uganda. In *American Political Science Review* 103 (2), pp. 231–247.

Blattman, Christopher; Miguel, Edward (2010): Civil war. In *Journal of Economic Literature* 48 (1), pp. 3–57.

Brett, Eduard A. (2003): Participation and accountability in development management. In *Journal of Development Studies* 40 (2), pp. 1–29.

Brikké, François; Bredero, Maarten (2003): Linking technology choice with operation and maintenance in the context of community water supply and sanitation. Reference document for planners and project staff. World Health Organization and IRC International Water and Sanitation Centre. Geneva.

Burton, Maxine; Cobb, Emma; Donachie, Peter; Judah, Gaby; Curtis, Val; Schmidt, Wolf-Peter (2011): The effect of handwashing with water or soap on bacterial contamination of hands. In *International Journal of Environmental Research and Public Health* 8 (1), pp. 97–104.

Cairncross, Sandy; Hunt, Caroline; Boisson, Sophie; Bostoen, Kristof; Curtis, Val; Fung, Isaac C. H.; Schmidt, Wolf-Peter (2010): Water, sanitation and hygiene for the prevention of diarrhoea. In *International Journal of Epidemiology* 39 (1), pp. 193–205.

Calderón, Valentina; Gáfaro, Margarita; Ibáñez, Ana María (2011): Forced Migration, Female Labor Force Participation, and Intra-household Bargaining: Does Conflict Empower Women. MICROCON (Research Working Paper, 56).

Carrasco, Raquel (2001): Binary choice with binary endogenous regressors in panel data: Estimating the effect of fertility on female labor participation. In *Journal of Business and Economic Statistics* 19 (4), pp. 385–394.

Central Intelligence Agency (2013): World Factbook. Central Intelligence Agency. Langley, VA. Available online at https://www.cia.gov/library/publications/the-world-factbook/, last accessed July 30, 2013.

Chase, Claire; Do, Quy Toan (2012): Handwashing behavior change at scale: evidence from a randomized evaluation in Vietnam. World Bank (Policy Research Working Paper, 6207).

Chiburis Das Lokshin (2011): A Practical Comparison of the Bivariate Probit and Linear IV Estimators. World Bank (Policy Research Working Paper, 5601).

Clasen, Thomas; Schmidt, Wolf-Peter; Rabie, Tamer; Roberts, Ian; Cairncross, Sandy (2007): Interventions   to improve water quality for preventing diarrhoea: systematic review and meta-analysis. In *British Medical Journal* 334 (7597), p. 782.

Colorado Department of Human Services (2010): Domestic Violence Program. 2010 Annual Report. Denver, CO.

Curtis, Val; Cairncross, Sandy (2003): Effect of washing hands with soap on diarrhoea risk in the community: a systematic review. In *The Lancet Infectious Diseases* 3 (5), pp. 275–281.

Curtis, Val; Schmidt, Wolf; Luby, Stephen; Florez, Rocio; Touré, Ousmane; Biran, Adam (2011): Hygiene: new hopes, new horizons. In *The Lancet Infectious Diseases* 11 (4), pp. 312–321.

Davis, Jennifer; Pickering, Amy J.; Rogers, Kirsten; Mamuya, Simon; Boehm, Alexandria B. (2011): The effects of informational interventions on household water management, hygiene behaviors, stored drinking water quality, and hand contamination in peri-urban Tanzania. In *American Journal of Tropical Medicine and Hygiene* 84 (2), p. 184.

Devine, Jacqueline (2010): Beyond tippy-taps: The role of enabling products in scaling up and sustaining handwashing. In *Waterlines* 29 (4), pp. 304–314.

DIVA-GIS (2013) Spatial Data. Available at: http://www.diva-gis.org/Data, last accessed June 13, 2013.

Dong, Yingying; Lewbel, Arthur (2012): A simple estimator for binary choice models with endogenous regressors. Boston College (Boston College Working Papers in Economics, 807). Available online at fmwww.bc.edu/EC-P/wp807.pdf.

Dreher, Axel; Klasen, Stephan; Raymond, James; Werker, Eric (2010): The costs of favoritism: Is politically-driven aid less effective? Center for European, Governance and Economic Development Research, University of Göttingen (CeGE Discussion Papers, 97).

Dupas, Pascaline (2011): Health behavior in developing countries. In *Annual Review of Economics* 3 (1), pp. 425–449.

Durevall, Dick; Lindskog, Annika (2013): Intimate Partner Violence and HIV in Sub-Saharan Africa. Department of Economics, University of Gothenburg (Working Papers in Economics, 563).

Ebrahim, Alnoor (2003): Accountability in practice: mechanisms for NGOs. In *World Development* 31 (5), pp. 813–829.

Ejemot-Nwadiaro, Regina I.; Ehiri, John E.; Meremikwu, Martin M.; Critchley, Julia A. (2012): Hand washing for preventing diarrhoea (Review). In *The Cochrane Library* (2), pp. 1–39.

Elbers, Chris; Godfrey, Samuel; Gunning, Jan; van der Velden, Matteus; Vigh, Melinda (2012): Effectiveness of Large Scale Water and Sanitation Interventions: The One Million Initiative in Mozambique. Tinbergen Institute. Amsterdam (Tinbergen Institute Discussion Papers, 12-069/2).

Esrey, Steve A.; Potash, James B.; Roberts, Leslie; Shiff, Clive (1991): Effects of improved water supply and sanitation on ascariasis, diarrhoea, dracunculiasis, hookworm infection, schistosomiasis, and trachoma. In *Bulletin of the World Health Organization* 69 (5), p. 609.

Fan, Victoria Yue-May; Mahal, Ajay (2011): What prevents child diarrhoea? The impacts of water supply, toilets, and hand-washing in rural India. In *Journal of Development Effectiveness* 3 (3), pp. 340–370.

Farmer, Amy; Tiefenthaler, Jill (1997): An economic analysis of domestic violence. In *Review of Social Economy* 55 (3), pp. 337–358.

Feil, E. J. (2012): The emergence and spread of dysentery. In *Nature Genetics* 44 (9), pp. 964–965.

Fewtrell, Lorna; Kaufmann, Rachel B.; Kay, David; Enanoria, Wayne; Haller, Laurence; Colford Jr, John M.(2005): Water, sanitation, and hygiene interventions to reduce diarrhoea in less developed countries: a systematic review and meta-analysis. In *The Lancet Infectious Diseases* 5 (1), pp. 42–52.

Fink, Günther; Günther, Isabel; Hill, Kenneth (2011): The effect of water and sanitation on child health: evidence from the demographic and health surveys 1986–2007. In *International Journal of Epidemiology* 40 (5), pp. 1196–1204.

Fishman, Raymond; Miguel, Edward (2008): Economic Gangsters: Princeton University Press.

Flemming, Hans-Curt (2009): Marine and Industrial Biofouling. Why Microorganisms live in biofilms and the problem of biofouling. In *Springer Series on Biofilms* (4), pp. 3–12.

Food and Agriculture Organization of the United Nations (2000) 'Global Forest Resources Assessment 2000 (FRA 2000)', available at: http://www.fao.org/forestry/32203/en/, last accessed June 13, 2013.

Fonagy, Peter (1999): Male perpetrators of violence against women: An attachment theory perspective. In *Journal of Applied Psychoanalytic Studies* 1 (1), pp. 7–27.

Freedman, David A.; Sekhon, Jasjeet S. (2010): Endogeneity in probit response models. In *Political Analysis* 18 (2), pp. 138–150.

Galiani, Sebastian; Gertler, Paul; Orsola-Vidal, Alexandra (2012): Promoting handwashing behavior in Peru: the effect of large-scale mass-media and community level interventions. Impact Evaluation Series No. 74. World Bank (Policy Research Working Paper, 6257).

Galiani, Sebastian; Gertler, Paul; Schargrodsky, Ernesto (2005): Water for life: The impact of the privatization of water services on child mortality. In *Journal of Political Economy* 113 (1), pp. 83–120.

Gallegos, José; Gutierrez, Italo (2011): The Effect of Civil Conflict on Domestic Violence: the Case of Peru (SSRN Working Paper Series). Available online at http://dx.doi.org/10.2139/ssrn.1904417, last accessed July 30, 2013.

Gamper-Rabindran, Shanti; Khan, Shakeeb; Timmins, Christopher (2010): The impact of piped water provision on infant mortality in Brazil: A quantile panel data approach. In *Journal of Development Economics* 92 (2), pp. 188–200.

Garcés, Laura (2005): Colombia: the link between drugs and terror. In *Journal of Drug Issues* 35 (1), pp. 83–105.

García-Moreno, Claudia; Jansen, HAFM; Ellsberg, Mary; Heise, Lori; Watts, Charlotte (2005): WHO multi-country study on women's health and domestic violence against women. Geneva: World Health Organization.

Greene, William H. (2012): Econometric Analysis. 7th ed. Upper Saddle River, NJ: Prentice hall.

Gundry, Stephen; Conroy, Ronan; Wright, Jim (2003): A systematic review of the health outcomes related to household water quality in developing countries. In *Journal of Water and Health* 2 (1), pp. 1–13.

Haidera, Mansour; Alhakimi, Saif Ali; Noaman, Abdulla; Al Kebsi, Alkhatib; Noaman, Anwar; Fencl, Amanda; Dougherty, Bill; Swartz, Chris (2011): Water scarcity and climate change adaptation for Yemen's vulnerable communities. In *Local Environment* 16 (5), pp. 473–488.

Hardin, James W. (2012): Bivariate probit models. In *Stata Technical Bulletin* 6 (33), pp. 15–20.

Heckman, James J. (1978): Dummy endogenous variables in a simultaneous equation system. In *Econometrica* 46 (4), pp. 931–959.

Heckman, James J. (1979): Sample selection bias as a specification error. In *Econometrica* 47 (1), pp. 153–161.

Hidrobo, M.; Fernald, L. (2013): Cash transfers and domestic violence. In *Journal of Health Economics* 32 (1), pp. 304–319.

Holm, Anders; Arendt, Jacob N. (2012): Evaluating the performance of simple estimators for probit models with two dummy endogenous regressors. In *Journal of Statistical Computation and Simulation* (ahead-of-print), pp. 1–23.

International Center for Tropical Agriculture (CIAT) 90m SRTM Data. Available at: http://srtm.csi.cgiar.org/, last accessed June 13, 2013.

Jalan, Jyotsna; Ravallion, Martin (2003): Does piped water reduce diarrhea for children in rural India? In *Journal of Econometrics* 112 (1), pp. 153–173.

Janssens, Wendy (2011): Externalities in program evaluation: the impact of a women's empowerment program on immunization. In *Journal of the European Economic Association* 9 (6), pp. 1082–1113.

Jensen, Peter Kjaer; Ensink, Jeroen H. J.; Jayasinghe, Gayathri; van der Hoek, Wim; Cairncross, Sandy; Dalsgaard, Anders (2002): Domestic transmission routes of pathogens: the problem of in-house contamination of drinking water during storage in developing countries. In *Tropical Medicine and International Health* 7 (7), pp. 604–609.

Karnofsky, Eva (2005): Familiäre Gewalt und Kindesmißbrauch in Kolumbien. In *Brennpunkt Lateinamerika* (4), pp. 37–44.

Kedir, Abbi; Admasachew, Lul (2010): Violence against women in Ethiopia. In *Gender, place and culture* 17 (4), pp. 437–452.

Kennedy, Peter E. (2005): Oh no! I got the wrong sign! What should I do? In *Journal of Economic Education* 36 (1), pp. 77–92.

Klasen, Stephan; Lechtenfeld, Tobias; Meier, Kristina; Rieckmann, Johannes P. (2011): Water Supply and Sanitation in Provincial Towns in Yemen. Impact Evaluation Report. Courant Research Centre 'Poverty, Equity and Growth in Developing and Transition Countries: Statistical Methods and Empirical Analysis', University of Göttingen (Discussion Paper, 102).

Klasen, Stephan; Lechtenfeld, Tobias; Meier, Kristina; Rieckmann, Johannes P. (2012): Benefits trickling away: the health impact of extending access to piped water and sanitation in urban Yemen. In *Journal of Development Effectiveness* 4 (4), pp. 537–565.

Koenig, Michael A.; Stephenson, Rob; Ahmed, Saifuddin; Jejeebhoy, Shireen J.; Campbell, Jacquelyn (2006): Individual and contextual determinants of domestic violence in North India. In *American Journal of Public Health* 96 (1), pp. 132–138.

Kosek, Margaret; Bern, Caryn; Guerrant, Richard L. (2003): The global burden of diarrhoeal disease, as estimated from studies published between 1992 and 2000. In *Bulletin of the World Health Organization* 81 (3), pp. 197–204.

Kremer, Michael; Miguel, Edward (2007): The illusion of sustainability. In *Quarterly Journal of Economics* 122 (3), pp. 1007–1065.

La Mattina, Giulia (2013): Armed Conflict and Domestic Violence: Evidence from Rwanda. Boston University (Working Paper Series). Available online at http://ssrn.com/abstract=2186916 or http://dx.doi.org/10.2139/ssrn.2186916, last accessed December 04, 2013.

Lange, W. J. de; Mahumani, B. K.; Steyn, M.; Oelofse, S. H. H. (2012): Monetary valuation of salinity impacts and microbial pollution in the Olifants Water Management Area, South Africa. In *Water SA* 38 (2), pp. 241–248.

LeChevallier, M. W.; Gullick, R.; Karim, Mohammad; Friedman, Melinda; Funk, J. (2003): The potential for health risks from intrusion of contaminants into the distribution system from pressure transients. In *Journal of Water and Health* 1 (1), pp. 3–14.

Lechtenfeld, Tobias (2012): Vulnerability to poverty: determinants and policy issues. 1st ed. Göttingen: Optimus Wissenschafts-Verlag.

Long, Sharon; Tauchen, Helen; Dryden Witte, Ann (1991): Domestic Violence: a Non-Random Affair. National Bureau of Economic Research (NBER Working Paper Series, 1665).

Luby, Stephen P.; Agboatwalla, Mubina; Bowen, Anna; Kenah, Eben; Sharker, Yushuf; Hoekstra, Robert M. (2009): Difficulties in maintaining improved handwashing behavior, Karachi, Pakistan. In *American Journal of Tropical Medicine and Hygiene* 81 (1), p. 140.

Luby, Stephen P.; Agboatwalla, Mubina; Painter, John; Altaf, Arshad; Billhimer, Ward L.; Hoekstra, Robert M. (2004): Effect of intensive handwashing promotion on childhood diarrhea in high-risk communities in Pakistan. In *Journal of the American Medical Association* 291 (21), pp. 2547–2554.

Luby, Stephen P.; Agboatwalla, Mubina; Painter, John; Altaf, Arshad; Billhimer, Ward; Keswick, Bruce; Hoekstra, Robert M. (2006): Combining drinking water treatment and hand washing for diarrhoea prevention, a cluster randomised controlled trial. In *Tropical Medicine and International Health* 11 (4), pp. 479–489.

Luoto, Jill E.; Levine, David; Albert, Jeff (2011): Information and persuasion: achieving safe water behaviors in Kenya. RAND. Santa Monica, CA (Labor and Population Working Paper, WR-885).

Maddala, Gangadharrao S. (1983): Limited-dependent and qualitative variables in econometrics. Cambridge, MA: Cambridge University Press.

Mejia, Daniel; Restrepo, Pascual (2008): The War on Illegal Drug Production and Trafficking: An Economic Evaluation of Plan Colombia. Households in Conflict Network (HiCN Working Paper, 53), updated on 1/01/2008.

Miguel, Edward; Kremer, Michael (2004): Worms: identifying impacts on education and health in the presence of treatment externalities. In *Econometrica* 72 (1), pp. 159–217.

Miguel, Edward; Saiegh, Sebastián M.; Satyanath, Shanker (2011): Civil war exposure and violence. In *Economics and Politics* 23 (1), pp. 59–73.

Murray, Christopher J. (1994): Quantifying the burden of disease: the technical basis for disability-adjusted life years. In *Bulletin of the World Health Organization* 72 (3), p. 429.

Newey, Whitney K. (1987): Efficient estimation of limited dependent variable models with endogenous explanatory variables. In *Journal of Econometrics* 36, pp. 231–250.

Niyogi, Swapan Kumar (2005): Shigellosis. In *Journal of Microbiology* 43 (2), pp. 133–143.

Noe, Dominik; Rieckmann, Johannes P. (2013): Violent Behavior. The effect of civil conflict on domestic violence in Colombia. Courant Research Centre 'Poverty, Equity and Growth in Developing and Transition Countries: Statistical Methods and Empirical Analysis', University of Göttingen (Discussion Paper, 136). Available online at http://www.uni-goettingen.de/crc-peg, last accessed July 30, 2013.

Norman, Guy; Pedley, Steve; Takkouche, Bahi (2010): Effects of sewerage on diarrhoea and enteric infections: a systematic review and meta-analysis. In *The Lancet Infectious Diseases* 10 (8), pp. 536–544.

Ojeda, Gabriel, Myriam Ordóñez, Luis Hernando Ochoa (2005) 'Salud Sexual y Reproductiva: Resultados Encuesta Nacional de Demografía y Salud 2005', Macro International/DHS+ Program, Maryland. Available at: http://www.measuredhs.com/publications/publication-FR172-DHS-Final-Reports.cfm, last accessed June 13, 2013.

Parker, Amy A.; Stephenson, R.; Riley, P. L.; Ombeki, S.; Komolleh, C.; Sibley, L.; Quick, Robert (2006): Sustained high levels of stored drinking water treatment and retention of hand-washing knowledge in rural Kenyan households following a clinic-based intervention. In *Epidemiology and Infection* 134 (5), pp. 1029–1036.

Park, Hun Myoung (2010): Regression Models for Binary Dependent Variables Using Stata, SAS, R, LIMDEP, and SPSS. Working Paper. The University Information Technology Services (UITS) Center for Statistical and Mathematical Computing, Indiana University. Bloomington, IN.

Patel, Ronak B.; Stoklosa, Hanni; Shitole, Shrutika; Shitole, Tejal; Sawant, Kiran; Nanarkar, Mahesh; Subbaraman, Ramnath; Ridpath, Alison; Patil-Deshmuk, Anita (2013): The high cost of diarrhoeal illness for urban slum households–a cost-recovery approach: a cohort study. In *The World Bank Research Observer* 3 (4).

Pengpid, Supa; Peltzer, Karl (2012): Hygiene behaviour and health attitudes in African countries. In *Current Opinion in Psychiatry* 25 (2), pp. 149–154.

Pineda, Carolina (2011): Plan Colombia: A Political, Economic, and Cultural Analysis of Coca and Poppy Eradication Projects in Putumayo, Colombia. In *Totem: The University of Western Ontario Journal of Anthropology* 13 (1), pp. 72–80.

Pollak, Robert A. (2004): An intergenerational model of domestic violence. In *Journal of Population Economics* 17 (2), pp. 311–329.

Poulos, Christine; Pattanayak, Subhrendu K.; Jones, Kelly (2006): A Guide to Water and Sanitation Sector Impact Evaluation. The World Bank. Washington, DC (Doing Impact Evaluation, 4).

Profamilia (2005) Encuesta Nacional de Demografía y Salud 2005, Bogotá. Available at: http://www.measuredhs.com/what-we-do/survey/survey-display-255.cfm, last accessed June 13, 2013.

Programa Presidencial de Derechos Humanos y Derecho Internacional Humanitario (2010) Observatorio Derechos Humanos (DDHH) y Derecho Internacional Humanitario (DIH): Diagnósticos Estadísticos por Departamento. Available at: http://www.derechoshumanos.gov.co/Observatorio/Paginas/DiagnosticosDepartamento.aspx, downloaded April 2010, last accessed June 13, 2013.

Prüss-Üstün, Annette; Corvalán, Carlos (2006): Preventing disease through healthy environments. Towards an estimate of the environmental burden of disease. Geneva.

Quelopana, Ana M. (2012): Violence Against Women and Postpartum Depression: The Experience of Chilean Women. In *Women & Health* 52 (5), pp. 437–453. Available online at http://dx.doi.org/10.1080/03630242.2012.687443, last accessed July 30, 2013.

Rauniyar, Ganesh; Orbeta Jr, Aniceto; Sugiyarto, Guntur (2011): Impact of water supply and sanitation assistance on human welfare in rural Pakistan. In *Journal of Development Effectiveness* 3 (1), pp. 62–102.

Rees, Daniel I.; Argys, Laura M.; Averett, Susan L. (2001): New evidence on the relationship between substance use and adolescent sexual behavior. In *Journal of Health Economics* 20 (5), pp. 835–845.

Richani, Nazih (1997): The Political Economy of Violence: The War-System In Colombia. In *Journal of Interamerican Studies and World Affairs* 39 (2), pp. 37–81.

Rosenbaum, Paul R.; Rubin, Donald B. (1983): The central role of the propensity score in observational studies for causal effects. In *Biometrika* 70 (1), pp. 41–55.

Rosen, Sydney; Vincent, Jeffrey R. (1999): Household water resources and rural productivity in Sub-Saharan Africa: A review of the evidence. Harvard Institute for International Development, Harvard University. Cambridge, MA.

Sanín, Francisco Gutiérrez (2008): Telling the difference: guerrillas and paramilitaries in the Colombian war. In *Politics and Society* 36 (1), pp. 3–34.

Santosham, Mathuram; Chandran, Aruna; Fitzwater, Sean; Fischer-Walker, Christa; Baqui, Abdullah H.; Black, Robert (2010): Progress and barriers for the control of diarrhoeal disease. In *The Lancet* 376 (9734), pp. 63–67.

Saretsky, Gary (1972): The OEO PC experiment and the John Henry effect. In *The Phi Delta Kappan* 53 (9), pp. 579–581.

Sattar, Abdul; Ahmad, Eatzaz; Pant, Krishna Prasad (2007): Willingness to Pay for the Quality of Drinking Water [with Comments]. In *Pakistan Development Review* 46 (4), pp. 767–777.

Schmidt, Wolf-Peter; Aunger, Robert; Coombes, Yolande; Maina, Peninnah Mukiri; Matiko, Carol Nkatha; Biran, Adam; Curtis, Val (2009): Determinants of handwashing practices in Kenya: the role of media exposure, poverty and infrastructure. In *Tropical Medicine and International Health* 14 (12), pp. 1534–1541.

Semenza, J. C.; Roberts, Leslie; Henderson, A.; Bogan, J.; Rubin, C. H. (1998): Water distribution system and diarrheal disease transmission: a case study in Uzbekistan. In *American Journal of Tropical Medicine and Hygiene* 59, pp. 941–946.

Sherman, Michelle D.; Sautter, Fred; Jackson, M. Hope; Lyons, Judy A.; Han, Xiaotong (2006): Domestic violence in veterans with posttraumatic stress disorder who seek couples therapy. In *Journal of Marital and Family Therapy* 32 (4), pp. 479–490.

SIG-OT (2013) Sistema de Información Geográfica para la Planeación y el Ordenamiento Territorial Nacional. Available at: http://sigotn.igac.gov.co/sigotn/, last accessed June 13, 2013.

Silver, Roxane Cohen; Holman, E. Alison; McIntosh, Daniel N.; Poulin, Michael; Gil-Rivas, Virginia (2002): Nationwide longitudinal study of psychological responses to September 11. In *Journal of the American Medical Association* 288 (10), pp. 1235–1244.

Steele, Abbey (2007): Massive civilian displacement in civil war: assessing variation in Colombia. Households in Conflict Network (HiCN Working Papers, 29), updated on 1/01/2007, available at http://ideas.repec.org/s/hic/wpaper.html, last accessed December 06, 2013.

Stock, James H.; Yogo, Motohiro (2005): Testing for Weak Instruments in Linear IV Regression. In Donald W. K. Andrews, James H. Stock (Eds.): Identification and Inference for Econometric Models. Essays in Honor of Thomas Rothenberg. Cambridge, UK: Cambridge University Press, pp. 80–108.

Strauss, Murray A. (1993): Physical Assaults by Wives. A Major Social Problem. Chapter 4. In Richard J. Gelles, Donileen R. Loseke (Eds.): Current Controversies on Family Violence. Newbury Park, CA: Sage Publications, pp. 67–87.

Sugita, Eri Woods (2004): Domestic water use, hygiene behavior, and children's diarrhea in rural Uganda. Doctoral dissertation. University of Florida.

Taher, T.; Bruns, B.; Bamaga, O.; Al-Weshali, A.; van Steenbergen, F. (2012): Local groundwater governance in Yemen: building on traditions and enabling communities to craft new rules. In *Hydrogeology Journal* 20 (6), pp. 1177–1188.

Tan Jr., Carlos Antonio R.; Capuno, Joseph J. (2012): Household decisions and child health: Estimating the links between water treatment and the incidence of diarrhea using non-recursive two-equation causal models. University of the Philippines. Philippines (UP School of Economics Discussion Papers, 2012-02).

Terza, Joseph V. (1986): Determinants of household electricity demand: A two-stage probit approach. In *Southern Economic Journal*, pp. 1131–1139.

Totouom, Armand Luc Fotue; Sikod, Fondo; Abba, Ibrahim (2012): Household choice of purifying drinking water in Cameroon. In *Environmental Management and Sustainable Development* 1 (2), pp. 101–115.

Trevett, Andrew; Carter, Richard; Tyrrel, Sean (2005): The importance of domestic water quality management in the context of faecal-oral disease transmission. In *Journal of Water and Health* 3 (3), pp. 259–270.

Turkington, Darrell A.; Bowden, R. J. (1988): Identification information and instruments in linear econometric models with rational expectations. In *Journal of Econometrics* 38 (3), pp. 361–373.

United Nations (2012): World Urbanization Prospects: The 2011 Revision, CD-ROM Edition. File 6: Average Annual Rate of Change of the Urban Population by Major Area, Region and Country, 1950-2050 (per cent). Department of Economic and Social Affairs, Population Division. New York.

United Nations (2013): The Millenium Development Goals Report 2013. New York: United Nations.

United Nations General Assembly (2010): Resolution 64/292: The human right to water and sanitation. A/RES/64/292.

Vairavamoorthy, Kala; Gorantiwar, Sunil D.; Mohan, S. (2007): Intermittent water supply under water scarcity situations. In *Water International* 32 (1), pp. 121–132.

Voors, Maarten J.; Nillesen, Eleonora E. M.; Verwimp, Philip; Bulte, Erwin H.; Lensink, Robert; van Soest, Daan P. (2012): Violent conflict and behavior: a field experiment in Burundi. In *American Economic Review* 102 (2), pp. 941–964.

Waddington, Hugh; Snilstveit, Birte (2009): Effectiveness and sustainability of water, sanitation, and hygiene interventions in combating diarrhoea. In *Journal of Development Effectiveness* 1 (3), pp. 295–335.

Waldmann, Peter (2007): Is there a Culture of Violence in Colombia? In *Terrorism and Political Violence* 19 (4), pp. 593–609.

Walker, Christa L. F.; Rudan, Igor; Liu, Li; Nair, Harish; Theodoratou, Evropi; Bhutta, Zulfiqar A.; O'Brien, Katherine L.; Campbell, Harry; Black, Robert E. (2013): Global burden of childhood pneumonia and diarrhoea. In *The Lancet* 381 (9875), pp. 1405–1416.

Wickström, Gustav; Bendix, Tom (2000): The" Hawthorne effect"—what did the original Hawthorne studies actually show? In *Scandinavian Journal of Work, Environment and Health* 26 (4), pp. 363–367.

Winkel, Frans-Willem (2007): Post traumatic anger. Missing link in the wheel of misfortune. Nijmegen: WLP.

Wood, Elisabeth Jean (2008): The social processes of civil war: The wartime transformation of social networks. In *Annual Review of Political Science* 11, pp. 539–561.

Wooldridge, Jeffrey M. (2010): Econometric Analysis of Cross-Sectional and Panel Data. 2nd edition. Cambridge, MA: The MIT Press.

World Bank (2004): Water Resources Strategy. Strategic Directions for World Bank Engagement. Washington, DC: International Bank for Reconstruction and Development/ The World Bank.

World Bank (2005): GINI index. The World Bank. Available online at http://data.worldbank.org/indica tor/SI.POV.GINI, last accessed July 30, 2013.

World Bank (2008): What Works in Water Supply and Sanitation? Lessons from Impact Evaluations. A Summary of Findings. IEG Independent Evaluation Group, The World Bank.

World Bank (2010): Water and Development. An Evaluation of World Bank Support, 1997-2007. Independent Evaluation Group (World Bank, IFC, MIGA). Washington, DC (IEG Study Series, 1 & 2).

World Bank (2013a): Annual population growth data. The World Bank. Available online at http://data.worldbank.org/indicator/SP.POP.GROW/countries, last accessed July 30, 2013.

World Bank (2013b): World Development Report 2013: Jobs. The World Bank. Washington, DC. Available online at http://siteresources.worldbank.org/EXTNWDR2013/Resources/8258024-1320950747192/8260293-1322665883147/WDR_2013_Report.pdf.

World Health Organization (2008): Guidelines for Drinking-water Quality: third Edition incorporating the first and second Addenda. Volume 1, Recommendations. Geneva.

Zeug, G.; Eckert, S. (2010): Population Growth and Its Expression in Spatial Built-up Patterns: The Sana'a, Yemen Case Study. In *Remote Sensing* 2 (4), pp. 1014–1034.

Zomer, Tizza P.; Erasmus, Vicki; van Empelen, Pepijn; Looman, Caspar; van Beeck, Ed F. (2013): Sociocognitive determinants of observed and self-reported compliance to hand hygiene guidelines in child day care centers. In *American Journal of Infection Control* 41 (6), pp. 497–502.

Zwane, A.P; Kremer, M. (2007): What Works in Fighting Diarrheal Diseases in Developing Countries? A Critical Review. In *The World Bank Research Observer* 22 (1), pp. 1–24.

Appendix A: Supplementing Chapter I

A.1   Data

Table A.1: Definitions of domestic violence

Form of violence	Violence	Threats	Combined
Pushed / shaked	x	-	X
Hit with hand	x	-	X
Hit with object	x	-	X
Bit	x	-	X
Kicked/ dragged	x	-	X
Threatened with knife, gun other weapon	x	x	X
Attacked with knife, gun other weapon	x	-	X
Tried to strangle, burn	x	-	X
Physically forced into unwanted sex act	x	-	X
Threatened with abandoning her	-	x	X
Threatened to take away children	-	x	X
Threatened to withdraw economic support	-	x	X
Used expressions like "you are good for nothing"	-	-	-
Didn't allow to see friends	-	-	-
Limited contact with family	-	-	-
Wanted to know "where she was all the time"	-	-	-

A.2   Technical notes

All the data used in this research was obtained before the first draft of this chapter in May 2010. Since the first draft did not contain geographical instruments the data for those was downloaded and generated a few months later. In these notes we do provide links to where the data can be obtained (current November 2013).

All Colombian districts have a unique five digit identification number which consist of a two digit identifier for the federal state and then a three digit identifier for the municipality. These identifiers are assigned by DANE in the codification *of the División Político Administrative* (DIVIPOLA, political administrative division).

The data on armed confrontations was extracted from documents published by the *Observatorio del Programa Presidencial de DDHH y DIH*; called the *Diagnóstico Estadístico* (Statistical Diagnostics) which are published separately for every federal state (available at: http://www.derechos humanos.gov.co/Observatorio/Paginas/DiagnosticosDepartamento.aspx). Originally the data was gathered from the daily updates of the *Departamento Administrativo de Seguridad* (DAS, Administrative Security Department). The document versions used in this chapter were downloaded in 2010 and contain among other things the number of armed confrontations for each municipality between 2003 and 2008.

The information on armed confrontations was merged with the DHS data, based on the identification number of the municipality.

For all GIS related tasks, the software ArcGIS version 9 was used. The basis of all GIS based data collection and data generation is a map of Colombia, downloaded as a polygon shapefile in the ESRI shapefile format from SIG-OT. SIG-OT, a geographic information system for national territorial planning and regulatory policy, is a joint project of different official Colombian institutions like the DANE and the *Instituto Geográfico Agustín Codazzi* (IGAC, Geographic institute Agustin Codazzi). It provides access to geo-referenced information of different kinds through a web-interface. From this interface the data can be downloaded in different formats. (http://sigotn.igac.gov.co/sigotn/frames _pagina.aspx)

Many indicators were constructed by determining whether the features of interest were located in or overlap with the municipalities. The information on highways was obtained by downloading a line shapefile of the highway network from SIG-OT, calculating a five kilometre buffer-zone around it and coding the municipalities that overlap with this buffer-zone. In much the same way the information

on pipelines is available as a line shapefile and the location of refineries as points. A polygon shapefile indicating oil regions is directly downloadable to determine the overlaps.

Most of the other information on municipalities, like population density, telephone coverage and the unsatisfied basic needs index can be downloaded as shapefiles as well. For this data however a spatial identification was not necessary because the information contained in the database file inside the shapefile (dbase format) could be directly merged to the other data, based on the municipality identifier.

The elevation and forest coverage statistics for each municipality were calculated using the Zonal Statistics from the Spatial Analyst tools contained in ArcGIS. The elevation data is a raster-dataset obtained from the Consultative Group on International Agricultural Research – Consortium for Spatial Information (CGIAR-CSI, data downloadable here: http://srtm.csi.cgiar.org/Index.asp) with a 90m resolution. The statistics like the maximum, minimum and average value of the raster points were calculated within the boundaries of the municipalities as they appear in the dataset from SIG-OT. The forest data comes from the Global Forest Resources Assessment 2000 (FRA 2000) conducted by the Food and Agriculture Organization of the United Nations and is also a raster dataset. For later assessments the original GIS data is not downloadable, therefore the year 2000 was used (downloadable here: http://www.fao.org/forestry/32203/en/). The calculation followed the same pattern as for the elevation data.

The location of military bases was determined on the town level. On their webpage the Colombian National Army presents each brigade with information in which town each of their battalions is based (http://www.ejercito.mil.co/?idcategoria=239185). The GPS coordinates of the towns where military bases were located was then determined using the dataset of official (US-American) foreign names for Colombia published by the GEOnet Names Server and developed by the National Geospatial-Intelligence Agency. The data is a text-file containing the name, type and some more information about each listed location as well as the GPS coordinates (http://earth-info.nga.mil/gns/html/cnty file/co.zip). The coordinates were then checked for consistency and plausibility. The *distance to the next base* is calculated as the average distance from every point in the municipality to the closest base. For this, a raster dataset was calculated, where the value of each raster point is the distance to the nearest military base. The average of those raster point values, within one municipality, was then determined with the same procedure as for the elevation data.

The same principle was used in the indicator *distance to metropolitan area*, while there are only five metropolitan areas: Barranquilla, Bogota, Bucaramanga, Cali, Cartagena, and Medellin.

A.3 Estimation results

Table A.2: Probit regression; alternative dependent variables

	(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)
	Threats		Threats and physical violence	
	Living together	All women	Living together	All women
No. armed confrt. 03/04	0.0015**	0.0021**	0.0016**	0.0023*
	(2.38)	(2.13)	(2.08)	(1.83)
Age respondent	-0.0020***	-0.0029***	-0.0032***	-0.0050***
	(-3.58)	(-6.26)	(-5.49)	(-9.95)
Resp. primary edu.	-0.0250*	-0.0374***	-0.0207	-0.0308*
	(-1.79)	(-2.61)	(-1.20)	(-1.83)
Resp. secondary edu.	-0.0462***	-0.0534***	-0.0459***	-0.0481***
	(-3.05)	(-3.45)	(-2.61)	(-2.82)
Resp. higher edu.	-0.0658***	-0.0706***	-0.0769***	-0.0736***
	(-3.20)	(-3.67)	(-3.30)	(-3.31)
Resp. currently working	0.0271***	0.0541***	0.0333***	0.0575***
	(4.93)	(8.53)	(5.06)	(7.86)
Sign. share of HH earnings	-0.0138*	-0.0002	-0.0122	0.0024
	(-1.94)	(-0.03)	(-1.46)	(0.27)
Min. 6 months pregnant	-0.0392**	-0.0448**	-0.0583***	-0.0646***
	(-2.14)	(-2.52)	(-2.70)	(-3.10)
Exp. of violence in past	0.0510***	0.0519***	0.0677***	0.0711***
	(6.04)	(6.55)	(6.87)	(7.35)
Partner's age	-0.0008*		-0.0019***	
	(-1.92)		(-4.07)	
Part. primary edu.	-0.0129	-0.0236**	-0.0072	-0.0173
	(-0.98)	(-2.21)	(-0.46)	(-1.41)
Part. secondary edu.	-0.0279*	-0.0366***	-0.0180	-0.0243*
	(-1.92)	(-3.11)	(-1.14)	(-1.79)
Part. higher edu.	-0.0727***	-0.0813***	-0.0783***	-0.0855***
	(-3.91)	(-4.90)	(-3.71)	(-4.30)
Income category 2	0.0022	-0.0062	0.0021	-0.0057
	(0.21)	(-0.51)	(0.18)	(-0.46)
Income category 3	-0.0204*	-0.0303*	-0.0175	-0.0286*
	(-1.69)	(-1.93)	(-1.26)	(-1.84)
Income category 4	-0.0486***	-0.0569***	-0.0671***	-0.0705***
	(-3.49)	(-3.24)	(-3.97)	(-3.81)
Income category 5	-0.0739***	-0.1016***	-0.0777***	-0.1033***
	(-4.65)	(-5.06)	(-4.14)	(-5.13)
Rural area	-0.0590***	-0.0603***	-0.0677***	-0.0660***
	(-5.73)	(-4.76)	(-5.72)	(-4.89)
No. children	0.0147***		0.0143***	
	(6.70)		(5.80)	
No. female adults in HH	-0.0144***		-0.0234***	
	(-3.03)		(-3.89)	
Pseudo R²	0.030	0.021	0.033	0.024
N	17319	21636	17319	21636

Average marginal effects reported, standard errors are clustered at municipality level; t-statistics in parentheses; asterisks denote the following significance levels: * p<0.10, ** p<0.05, *** p<0.01

Table A.3: Negative Binomial regression; dep. var. no. armed confrontations 2003/04

	(1)	(2)	(3)
	First stage of two-stage model	Alternative instruments	
Elevation range	0.0004***	0.0005***	0.0005***
	(4.47)	(11.22)	(10.83)
Oil region	0.7438***	0.8220***	0.8063***
	(3.54)	(7.30)	(6.97)
Area km2		0.0001***	0.0001***
		(3.55)	(3.31)
Perc. area with coca cultivation		2.0294***	2.0379***
		(5.00)	(4.97)
Perc. area forest covered		1.5742***	1.6556***
		(7.53)	(7.75)
National highway		0.2080*	0.1877
		(1.82)	(1.62)
Oil refinery		0.3460	0.2616
		(1.16)	(0.88)
Telephone coverage 2005		0.0147***	0.0142***
		(4.64)	(3.63)
Population density 2005			0.0000
			(0.37)
Oil pipeline			0.0815
			(0.66)
Mean distance to larger town			-0.0017*
			(-1.78)
Mean distance to next army base			0.0037*
			(1.65)
Constant	-0.0818	-1.8333***	-1.9289***
	(-0.41)	(-10.85)	(-9.15)
Pseudo R²	0.0356	0.0711	0.0724
N	230	1116	1116

t-statistics in parentheses; asterisks denote the following significance levels: * p<0.10, ** p<0.05, *** p<0.01

A.4   Geography

Figure A.1: Surveyed districts in Colombia
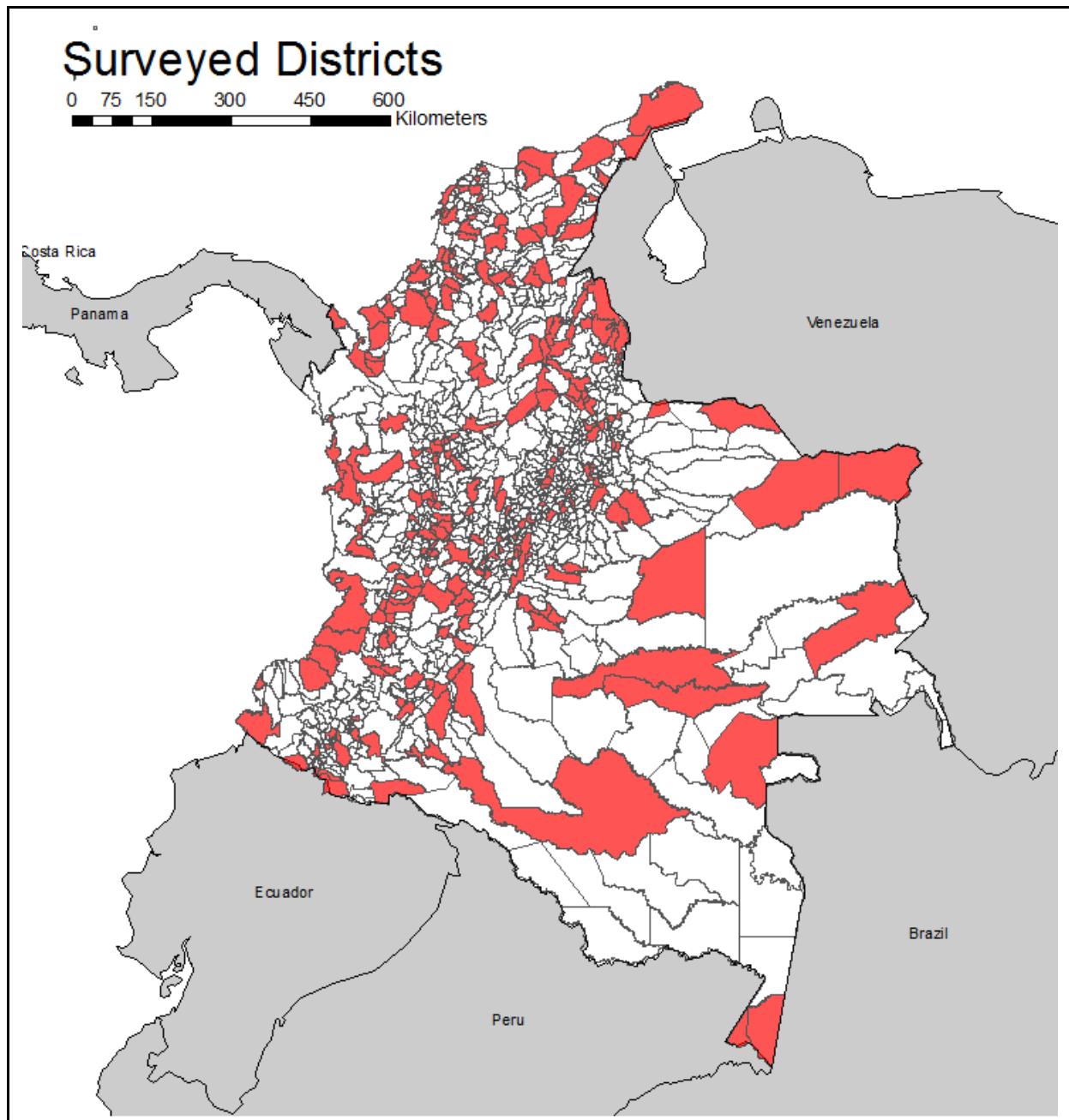
Source: Authors' calculations. DHS Data: Profamilia (2005); Map data for Colombian districts: SIG-OT (2013); Map data for neighbouring features: DIVA-GIS (2013).

Figure A.2: Conflict intensity
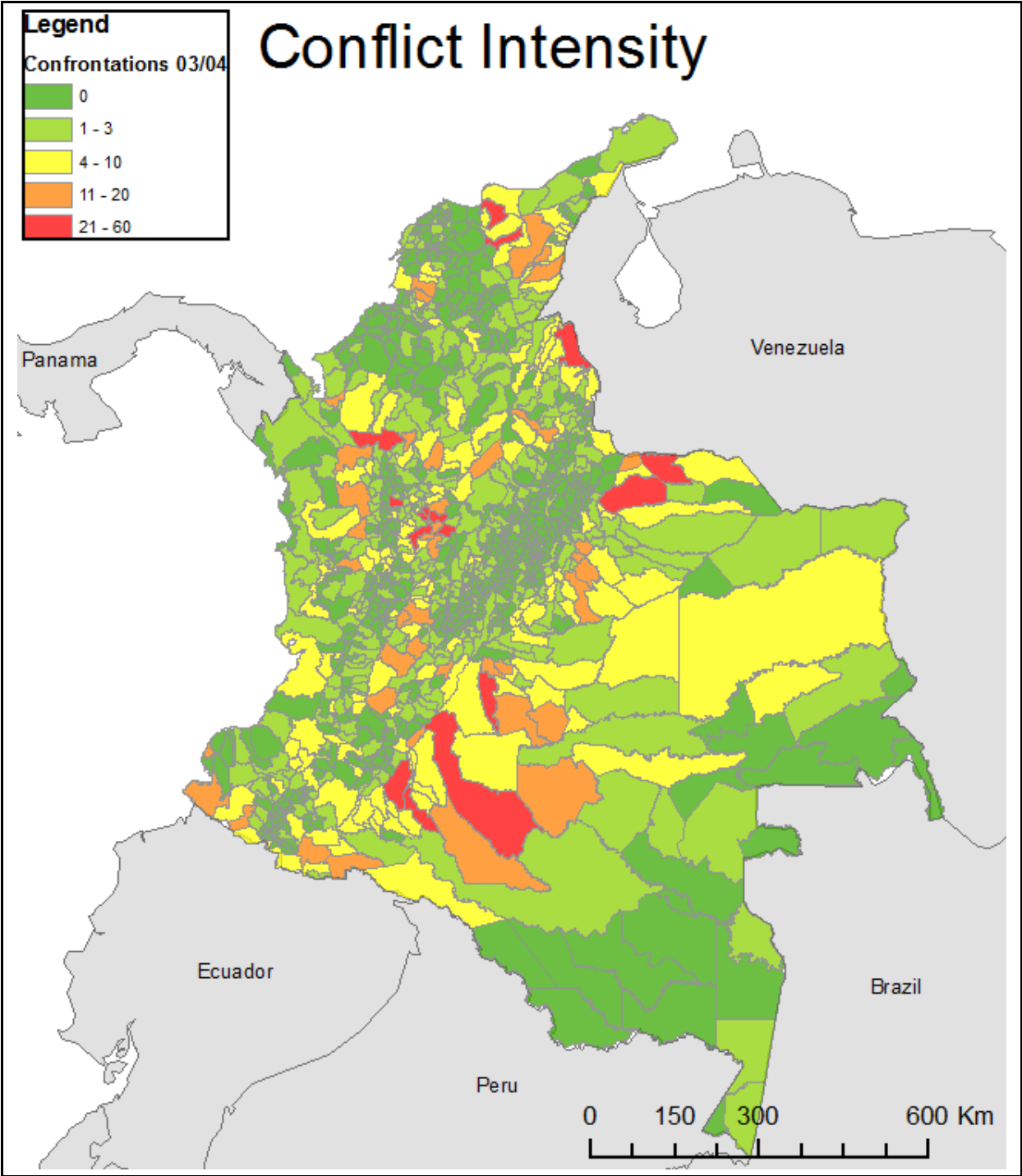
Source: Authors' calculations. Conflict data: Programa Presidencial de Derechos Humanos y Derecho Internacional Humanitario (2010); Map data for Colombian districts: SIG-OT (2013); Map data for neighbouring features: DIVA-GIS (2013).

Appendix B: Supplementing Chapter II

B.1   Description of covariates

Health-related variables

Disease	Household incidence of water-borne symptoms (at least one out of five symptoms)
Diarrhoea	Household incidence of diarrhoea (bloody and watery)
Severity	Household incidence of water-related symptoms, which were classified as severe by the respondent
Disease (child)	Same as Disease, limited to children five years and younger
Diarrhoea (child)	Same as Diarrhoea, limited to children five years and younger
Severity (child)	Same as Severity, limited to children five years and younger
Workdays missed	Number of work days missed due to water-related symptoms limited to working age household members
Schooldays missed	Number of school days missed due to water-related symptoms limited to household members enrolled in school.

Socio-economic characteristics

Household size	The total number of household members
Dependency ratio	Number of household members younger than 15 or older than 60 by total number of household members
Education (head)	Set of binary variables indicating the educational level of the household head: no education (used as reference category); primary schooling (including madrasa schools and vocational training which provide reading and writing skills); middle schooling; secondary schooling; and tertiary schooling.
House owned	Binary variable indicating whether the house/apartment is owned by the household
Asset	PCA index of reported housing characteristics.

Housing characteristics

Distance to centre	The distance of the dwelling from the city centre in meters
Age of house	The reported age of the dwelling
Rocky ground	Binary variable with value 1 if house is built on rocky ground

Hygiene-related variables

Knowledge (disease)   Binary variable, takes the value 1 if the health knowledge question correctly answered. Test asks about five symptoms of water borne diseases

Soap   Binary variable indicating whether soap and/or detergent is used for hand washing

Purification   Binary variable indicating whether water is purified by the household before drinking

Water quality-related variables

Unreliable   Binary variable indicating whether the respondent claimed that the most substantial problem of the main source for drinking water is unreliability

Bad water quality   Binary variable indicating whether the quality of the water from the main source for drinking is „bad" or „very bad"; self-reported

Sewerage clogging   Number of times the toilet of the household was unusable during the past three months

Truck   Binary variable indicating whether household uses trucked water for drinking

B.2   Descriptive statistics

Table B.1: Household sample

Region	Connection	HHs	Population
Mountainous	Water	201	1777
	Sanitation	270	2257
	None	374	2977
	Control	298	2508
Coast	Water	127	859
	Sanitation	714	4746
	Control	434	3101
Total		2418	18225

Table B.2: Socio-economic characteristics in treatment and control groups

Indicator	HH Size	Children (<16 yrs)	Elderly (>64 yrs)	Dependency Ratio	Age Head	Headship	Yrs of Edu Head	School Enrolment Children	Income per capita per day	HHs
Unit	Persons	Persons	Persons	Ratio	Yrs	% Male	Yrs	% of children	USD	N
Mountain										
Water	8.84	4.03	0.33	1.28	44.78	95.02	6.74	59.86	2.19	201
Sanitation	8.36	3.53	0.23	1.08	45.86	94.44	6.13	55.10	2.09	270
None	7.96	3.87	0.20	1.33	41.74	95.99	6.12	60.09	2.11	374
Control	8.42	3.96	0.16	1.27	44.03	92.28	5.36	47.92	1.94	298
Coastal										
Water	6.76	2.81	0.19	1.03	45.74	85.83	5.76	78.77	1.91	127
Sanitation	6.65	2.36	0.24	0.88	46.17	88.80	7.85	85.82	2.55	714
Control	7.15	3.19	0.26	1.24	45.74	91.47	4.64	72.00	1.87	434
Total	7.54	3.23	0.23	1.12	44.97	91.81	6.31	67.20	2.17	2418

Table B.3: Contamination of drinking cup

Region	Connection	Well type	e.coli *%*	HH *N*
Mountainous	Water	Pipewells	20.0	70.0
	Sanitation		38.4	73.0
	None	Truckwells	20.3	64.0
	Control	Truckwells	40.0	65.0
Coastal	Water	Pipewells	46.4	69.0
	Water & Sanit.		36.6	71.0
	Control	Truckwells	61.4	88.0
Total			38.6	500.0

Table B.4: Change of pollution between storage tank and drinking cup

Region	Connection	e.coli *Percentage Points*	HH *N*
Mountainous	Water	23.3	116
	No Connection	16	50
	Control	22	50
Coastal	Water	25.6	117
	Control	31	71
Total		24.1	407

B.3   Estimation results

Table B.5: IV Regressions – children age zero to five years

	(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)	(6)	(7)	(8)	(9)
Outcome	Disease Incidence			Diarrhoea Incidence			Disease Severity		
Region	Mountainous		Coastal	Mountainous		Coastal	Mountainous		Coastal
Treatment	Water	Sanitation	Sanitation	Water	Sanitation	Sanitation	Water	Sanitation	Sanitation
Control group	In-town & out-town	Water	Water	In-town & out-town	Water	Water	In-town & out-town	Water	Water
Water	0.213*			0.155***			0.307**		
	(0.111)			(0.052)			(0.119)		
Sanitation	0.066	0.103	-0.552	-0.024	0.001	-0.187	-0.040	0.158	-0.626
	(0.095)	(0.122)	(0.420)	(0.043)	(0.065)	(0.148)	(0.097)	(0.120)	(0.446)
Primary	0.064	0.223**	0.073	0.014	0.063	0.058	0.107*	0.314***	0.050
	(0.054)	(0.098)	(0.094)	(0.023)	(0.045)	(0.048)	(0.059)	(0.106)	(0.115)
Middle	0.032	0.078	-0.100	0.034	0.046	0.005	0.001	0.061	0.052
	(0.082)	(0.184)	(0.120)	(0.037)	(0.073)	(0.071)	(0.089)	(0.173)	(0.203)
Secondary	0.105	0.213*	0.006	0.034	0.070	0.038	0.026	0.233**	-0.061
	(0.081)	(0.118)	(0.120)	(0.031)	(0.052)	(0.050)	(0.066)	(0.099)	(0.136)
Tertiary	-0.006	0.117	0.113	0.045	0.117*	0.019	0.007	0.175	0.098
	(0.070)	(0.119)	(0.125)	(0.036)	(0.063)	(0.052)	(0.073)	(0.125)	(0.139)
Disease knowledge	-0.033	-0.058	0.070	-0.031	0.003	0.045	0.083*	0.034	0.151**
	(0.048)	(0.082)	(0.066)	(0.020)	(0.036)	(0.032)	(0.046)	(0.080)	(0.075)
Soap	0.082*	0.043	0.072	0.011	-0.029	0.004	0.021	0.024	0.112
	(0.050)	(0.087)	(0.085)	(0.021)	(0.039)	(0.043)	(0.048)	(0.083)	(0.091)
Purification	-0.089	-0.046	-0.023	-0.022	-0.036	0.065	-0.101	-0.105	0.066
	(0.061)	(0.091)	(0.097)	(0.032)	(0.043)	(0.077)	(0.064)	(0.091)	(0.191)
Bad water quality	0.196	0.272	0.051	0.071	0.147**	0.044	0.230*	0.275	0.311
	(0.122)	(0.179)	(0.310)	(0.048)	(0.073)	(0.123)	(0.124)	(0.183)	(0.380)
Sewerage clogging	0.001	0.030	0.032	-0.000	0.018	0.006	0.004	0.017	0.022
	(0.006)	(0.036)	(0.090)	(0.002)	(0.015)	(0.038)	(0.008)	(0.033)	(0.088)
Dependency ratio	-0.040	-0.017	-0.087	-0.037	-0.056	-0.064	-0.150	-0.182	-0.274
	(0.135)	(0.252)	(0.171)	(0.064)	(0.131)	(0.082)	(0.141)	(0.253)	(0.197)
House owned	-0.071	-0.153	0.129	-0.044*	-0.073	0.033	-0.080	-0.081	0.102
	(0.056)	(0.118)	(0.134)	(0.025)	(0.049)	(0.057)	(0.056)	(0.104)	(0.134)
Assets	-0.024	-0.068	0.091**	-0.015	-0.029	0.025	-0.044	-0.135**	0.191***
	(0.037)	(0.071)	(0.043)	(0.014)	(0.029)	(0.021)	(0.036)	(0.064)	(0.071)
Truck	0.126*	0.147*		0.120***	0.132***		0.152**	0.104	
	(0.070)	(0.088)		(0.030)	(0.037)		(0.065)	(0.080)	
Constant	0.148	0.330	0.356	0.021	0.151	0.163*	0.203	0.446*	0.312
	(0.132)	(0.240)	(0.227)	(0.057)	(0.122)	(0.095)	(0.129)	(0.244)	(0.259)
Observations	784	311	411	784	311	411	784	311	411
F-Test stage 1	57.76	34.38	4.938	57.76	34.38	4.938	57.76	34.38	4.938
Prob > F	0.000	0.000	0.00762	0.000	0.000	0.00762	0.000	0.000	0.00762
Hansen P-val	0.795	0.907	0.703	0.645	0.632	0.496	0.557	0.667	0.793
Instruments	Amran Rocky Distance Age of House	Rocky Distance Age of House	Distance Age of House	Amran Rocky Distance Age of House	Rocky Distance Age of House	Distance Age of House	Amran Rocky Distance Age of House	Rocky Distance Age of House	Distance Age of House

Robust standard errors in parentheses; *** p<0.01, ** p<0.05, * p<0.1

Table B.6: IV Regressions – all ages

	(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)	(6)	(7)	(8)	(9)
Outcome	Disease Incidence			Diarrhoea Incidence			Disease Severity		
Region	Mountain		Coastal	Mountain		Coastal	Mountain		Coastal
Treatment	Water	Sanitation	Sanitation	Water	Sanitation	Sanitation	Water	Sanitation	Sanitation
Control group	In-town & out-town	Water	Water	In-town & out-town	Water	Water	In-town & out-town	Water	Water
Water	0.072**			0.035			0.067**		
	(0.031)			(0.022)			(0.027)		
Sanitation	-0.012	0.008	-0.152	0.002	0.011	-0.071	-0.022	0.024	-0.079
	(0.025)	(0.028)	(0.122)	(0.017)	(0.021)	(0.096)	(0.022)	(0.026)	(0.083)
Primary	-0.003	0.036*	-0.002	0.010	0.026*	-0.006	-0.004	0.029	-0.010
	(0.012)	(0.021)	(0.016)	(0.008)	(0.014)	(0.010)	(0.011)	(0.019)	(0.013)
Middle	-0.003	-0.034	0.014	0.010	-0.000	0.027	-0.023	-0.029	0.002
	(0.019)	(0.028)	(0.035)	(0.013)	(0.019)	(0.028)	(0.015)	(0.024)	(0.025)
Secondary	0.014	0.038	-0.006	0.023*	0.030	0.009	-0.003	0.028	-0.019
	(0.018)	(0.027)	(0.019)	(0.013)	(0.019)	(0.014)	(0.015)	(0.022)	(0.016)
Tertiary	-0.002	0.023	0.018	0.025	0.047	0.008	-0.011	0.010	-0.003
	(0.021)	(0.039)	(0.023)	(0.016)	(0.031)	(0.017)	(0.018)	(0.032)	(0.019)
Disease knowledge	0.005	-0.005	0.017	0.002	0.014	0.010	0.025***	0.016	0.016*
	(0.011)	(0.018)	(0.012)	(0.008)	(0.013)	(0.008)	(0.009)	(0.015)	(0.010)
Soap	0.014	-0.004	0.036**	0.011	0.001	0.007	0.004	-0.000	0.017
	(0.012)	(0.020)	(0.017)	(0.008)	(0.013)	(0.012)	(0.010)	(0.018)	(0.013)
Purification	-0.006	0.003	0.097	-0.010	-0.011	0.062	-0.010	-0.013	0.058
	(0.015)	(0.022)	(0.060)	(0.011)	(0.016)	(0.045)	(0.012)	(0.018)	(0.046)
Bad water quality	0.042	0.034	0.023	0.030	0.027	0.007	0.040*	0.027	0.048
	(0.026)	(0.035)	(0.041)	(0.021)	(0.028)	(0.037)	(0.021)	(0.028)	(0.039)
Sewerage clogging	0.002	0.008	0.009	0.000	0.010	0.007	0.001	0.001	-0.003
	(0.002)	(0.008)	(0.007)	(0.001)	(0.007)	(0.007)	(0.001)	(0.005)	(0.005)
Dependency ratio	0.121***	0.113*	0.046	0.052**	0.054	0.023	0.100***	0.103*	0.044
	(0.037)	(0.063)	(0.034)	(0.025)	(0.046)	(0.023)	(0.034)	(0.056)	(0.029)
House owned	-0.044***	-0.057*	-0.006	-0.014	-0.031	-0.002	-0.028**	-0.028	0.014
	(0.014)	(0.029)	(0.027)	(0.010)	(0.019)	(0.021)	(0.012)	(0.024)	(0.017)
Assets	-0.009	-0.010	0.019*	-0.004	-0.000	0.016**	-0.013*	-0.018	0.018**
	(0.009)	(0.018)	(0.011)	(0.007)	(0.014)	(0.007)	(0.007)	(0.014)	(0.008)
Truck	0.025	0.025		0.038***	0.044***		0.019	0.021	
	(0.017)	(0.020)		(0.010)	(0.013)		(0.015)	(0.017)	
Constant	0.022	0.077	0.114	-0.026	-0.010	0.043	0.022	0.044	0.038
	(0.030)	(0.057)	(0.073)	(0.023)	(0.046)	(0.056)	(0.026)	(0.048)	(0.050)
Observations	1,072	436	826	1,072	436	826	1,072	436	826
F-Test stage 1	78.71	46.91	3.160	78.71	46.91	3.160	78.71	46.91	3.160
Prob > F	0.000	0.000	0.043	0.000	0.000	0.043	0.000	0.000	0.043
Hansen P-val	0.561	0.887	0.330	0.380	0.335	0.420	0.294	0.518	0.792
Instruments	Amran Rocky Distance Age of	Rocky Distance Age of	Distance Age of	Amran Rocky Distance Age of	Rocky Distance Age of	Distance Age of	Amran Rocky Distance Age of	Rocky Distance Age of	Distance Age of

Robust standard errors in parentheses; *** p<0.01, ** p<0.05, * p<0.1

B.4   Pollution pattern

Figure B.1: Spatial distribution of e.coli-polluted storage tanks (coastal)
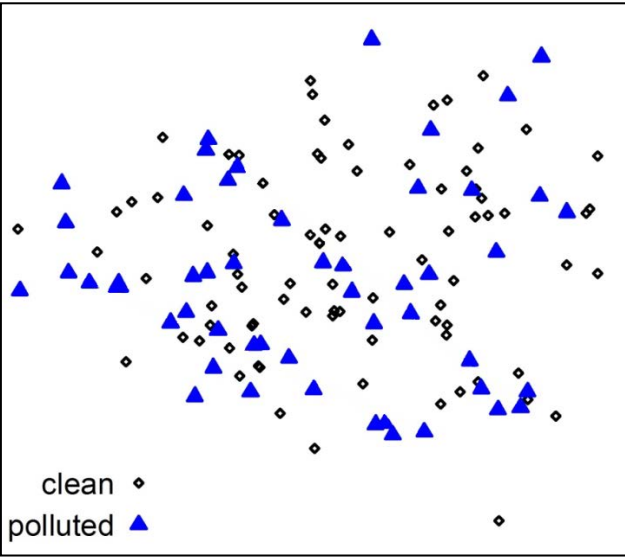
Note: The figure shows the spatial distribution of households with e.coli polluted storage tank, based on GPS coordinates. While some pollution appears to be randomly scattered, two parallel close-to-linear patterns seem to exist, aligned north-west to south-east, and located at the south-western periphery and in the centre. These patterns in parts correspond to roads along which water pipe construction proceeded.

Appendix C: Supplementing Chapter III

C.1   Technical notes

Methods of water purification differ in their capability to withhold or neutralize different contaminations (viruses, bacteria, vermin, chemicals, excess or harmful minerals like arsenic or fluorides, and suspended particles), their speed of use and suitability for different volumes, and their effectiveness to improve colour, odour and taste of the water. These methods include domestic chemical disinfection using chlorine or iodine, boiling, filtration, pre-settlement before use, storage and sedimentation, a coagulation-flocculation-settlement-procedure, aeration, exposure to sunlight, and desalination (see Brikké, Bredero 2003Brikké and Bredero, 2003). Below, I summarize the most important details regarding these methods.

While *chlorination* is easy and cost-efficient, its drawback is its unsavoury taste. The chlorine can be added in form of powder, tablets or liquid. Chlorine compounds immediately start to react with pathogen in the water. If enough chlorine was added, some free residual chlorine will remain detectable after all pathogens have been destroyed. A concentration of 0.5 milligram per litre is recommended (World Health Organization, 2008) in order to secure continued disinfection in case new pathogens enter, while higher concentrations will shift the trade-off between disinfection and taste to the detriment of the latter. Initial water quality – including turbidity – commands the amount of chlorine needed. *Iodine* has a similar effect, while the taste is perceived by many users to be less offensive, especially when adding vitamin C to the water following the contact time. Nonetheless, water treated with iodine is not recommended for consumption for pregnant women and persons allergic to iodine.

Boiling reliably kills off microorganisms causing diarrheal diseases, even at high altitudes with low air pressure and a lowered boiling point of the water. As the effect is reached already below the boiling point, even short ebullition is sufficient.

Filtration works through particle removal or adsorption. Several methods are available, differing in level of sophistication, cost and speed. These include slow and rapid sand filtration, straining through fine cloth, ceramic filters, silver-ion filters, membrane and reverse osmosis processes, combined technology filtration, and adsorption using granular charcoal or activated carbon filters.

Simple *presettlement* of the drinking water for more than two days eliminates besides some bacteria also *Carcaria* snail larvae, for example. Longer *storage and sedimentation* is a method rather used at communal than at domestic level due to the rather time-consuming character of the procedure, which makes it inconvenient for day-to-day application. Solid contaminants sink to the ground of the storage container and can then be separated from the drinking water. When employing the

coagulation-flocculation-settlement-procedure, a liquid coagulant is intermixed with the water in order to bind particles. These then cohere to larger flocks and collect at the ground or can be removed otherwise. Aluminium sulphate is an example for a suitable coagulant. *Aeration* oxidizes iron and manganese.

Exposure to sunlight in a clear plastic – not glass – bottle to direct ultraviolet rays will kill the majority of microbes in the water within a couple of hours. The method is sometimes referred to as solar water disinfection (SODIS).

Desalination alleviates disinfection due to "low total organic carbon and particle content, low microbial loads and minimal oxidant demand" (Curtis, Cairncross 2003), but should be combined with chlorination.

C.2 Description of covariates

Table C.1: Description of covariates

Explanatory variables	Type	Description
Main explanatory variables		
Piped Water	Binary	Indicator if the household is connected to the piped water network (1=yes, 0=no)
Sewerage	Binary	Indicator if the household is connected to the improved sewerage network, conditional on connection to piped water (1=yes, 0=no)
Household head characteristics		
Age of HH Head	Continuous	Age of the household head in years
Gender of HH Head	Binary	Indicator of gender of household head (male=1, female=0)
Marital Status HH Head	Binary	Indicator if household head is currently married (1=yes, 0=no)
Edu. of HH Head: None	Categorical	Indicator of level of education completed by household head: none
Edu. of HH Head: Primary	Categorical	Indicator of level of education completed by household head: primary
Edu. of HH Head: Middle	Categorical	Indicator of level of education completed by household head: middle/ preparatory
Edu. of HH Head: Secondary	Categorical	Indicator of level of education completed by household head: secondary
Edu. of HH Head: Tertiary	Categorical	Indicator of level of education completed by household head: tertiary/ university
Edu. Duration HH Head	Continuous	Number of years of education the household head enjoyed
Literacy of HH Head	Binary	Indicator if the household head is capable of reading (1=yes, 0=no)
Household characteristics		
Dependency Ratio	Continuous	Ratio of number of household members outside of working age bracket 15-60 and those inside, ranges from 0 to 1
# of HH Members	Continuous	Number of all household members
# of Children	Continuous	Number of children (up to age of twelve years)
# Children & Elderly	Continuous	Number of children (up to age of twelve years or older than 70)
Mean Edu. Duration Adults	Continuous	Average number of years of education an adult in a given household has enjoyed
Disease Awareness	Binary	Indicator taking the value 1 if the respondent correctly reports 5 symptoms to possibly be related with water handling and hygiene
Symptom Occurrence	Binary	Indicator if any household members experienced any symptoms during the past four weeks before the interview (1=yes, 0=no)
HH Member trained	Binary	Indicator if any household member previously participated in any type of hygiene training (1=yes, 0=no)
Asset Index	Continuous	Aggregate index of wealth based on reported housing characteristics and selected assets, by region, polychoric PCA
Water Tank present	Binary	Indicator if the household uses any water tanks to store water (1=yes, 0=no)
Soap bought	Binary	Indicator if there is at least one piece of soap bought during a typical month (1=yes, 0=no)

Location effects

Region	Binary	Indicator of location in mountainous (1) or coastal (0) region
Mountain Treatment	Binary	Indicator of location in mountainous project town (1=yes, 0=no)
Mountain Control	Binary	Indicator of location in mountainous control town (1=yes, 0=no)
Coastal Treatment	Binary	Indicator of location in coastal project town (1=yes, 0=no)
Coastal Control	Binary	Indicator of location in coastal control town (1=yes, 0=no)

Exposure to ICT and mass media

TV present	Binary	Indicator if the household owns a television set (1=yes, 0=no)
TV and/or PC present	Binary	Indicator if the household owns a television set and/ or a personal computer (1=yes, 0=no)
Sat. Dish present	Binary	Indicator if the household owns a satellite dish (1=yes, 0=no)
Radio present	Binary	Indicator if the household owns a radio broadcasting receiver (1=yes, 0=no)
GSM present	Binary	Indicator if at least one cell phone is owned by one of the household members (1=yes, 0=no)
Landline Connection	Binary	Indicator if the household owns a landline phone (1=yes, 0=no)
Web Access	Binary	Indicator if the household has access to the World Wide Web (1=yes, 0=no)

Housing characteristics

IV Distance to Centre	Continuous	Instrumental variable, indicating distance of house from the centre of the town in meters (based on GPS data)
IV House on Rock	Binary	Instrumental variable, indicating if the house rests upon shapeable (0) or rocky subgrade (1)
IV Age of House	Continuous	Instrumental variable, indicating reported age of the house (ranging from new to 820 years)
Building material 1	Categorical	Indicator that the outer walls of the house consist of straw, sticks and/ or mud
Building material 2	Categorical	Indicator that the outer walls of the house consist of straw, sticks and/ or mud wood, mud and plastering
Building material 3	Categorical	Indicator that the outer walls of the house consist of natural stone
Building material 4	Categorical	Indicator that the outer walls of the house consist of sun-dried bricks
Building material 5	Categorical	Indicator that the outer walls of the house consist of burnt bricks
Building material 6	Categorical	Indicator that the outer walls of the house consist of stone and cement
Building material 7	Categorical	Indicator that the outer walls of the house consist of cement

C.3 Descriptive statistics

Table C.2: Means and differences of outcomes by connection status

Outcome	Mean, not connected (control)	Min	Max	Mean, piped water	Min	Max	Diff. to control	Mean, improved sewerage	Min	Max	Diff. to control
1) Treatment of drinking water	0.069	0	1	0.120	0	1	0.050***	0.107	0	1	0.037***
2) Use of cleanser for hand washing	0.614	0	1	0.695	0	1	0.083***	0.820	0	1	0.208***
3) Spending for soap	64.85	0	500	84.46	0	428.89	19.61***	82.97	0	500	18.12***
4) Spending for cleanser	144.78	0	760	149.42	0	562.50	4.64	162.88	0	833.33	18.10***
5) Frequency of latrine-cleaning	7.57	0	28	7.93	1	21	0.37*	8.38	0	35	0.82***

Table C.3: Mean spending (per capita, in YER) on cleanser by location and connection status

Connection	Mountain Project (YER)	N	SD	Mountain Control (YER)	N	SD	Coastal Project (YER)	N	SD	Coastal Control (YER)	N	SD
None	153.87	265	111.93	160.01	196	123.26	-	-	-	131.85	425	116.45
Piped Water	159.38	125	105.01	-	-	-	138.91	118	115.96	-	-	-
Sewerage	173.21	180	119.26	-	-	-	160.26	660	132.60	-	-	-

N over all connection groups and locations: 1969

Note: no households are connected to piped water or improved sewerage in the control towns. All households in the sample are connected in the coastal project town. Values capped at 500 YER per capita for each component (spending on soap, spending on laundry detergent) to exclude industrial use.

C.4   Methodology of employed instrumental variable approaches

I briefly summarize the findings on relevance and validity of the instrumental variables considered for use in Chapter III. For the dependent variable *Probability of Drinking Water Treatment*, the instruments *IV Age of House* and *IV Rocky Ground* used in the Wooldridge procedure (which is explained below) appear valid with F-statistics of the predicted values well above the critical value[115] for both (separately) instrumented covariates. Exogeneity is more of a concern, as the Sargan-Hansen test for overidentification suggests that the null hypothesis – which says that the instrument or set of instruments is valid – can be rejected on grounds of statistical significance[116] at the conventional level of five (when instrumenting *Connection to Piped Water*) respectively ten (*Connection to Improved Sewerage*) per cent.[117] For the dependent variable *Use of Cleanser for Hand Washing* the same two instruments appear valid, while the Sargan-Hansen test again does not provide support for my assumption of exogeneity.[118]

For *Spending on Soap* the picture looks similarly unsatisfactory. The two instruments receive less support regarding their validity now, while the null of exogeneity of the instruments can still be rejected at the ten per cent level.[119] When introducing the third instrument *IV Distance* on top of the other two, validity is compellingly supported again; but lack of support of the assumption of exogeneity by the Sargan-Hansen test remains an issue.[120] For the more comprehensive *Spending on*

---

[115] For the instrumented covariate *Connection to Piped Water* the Cragg-Donald Wald F-statistic is 36.90 compared to a Stock-Yogo critical reference value of 16.38 for one instrumented endogenous covariate and one instrument, and a desired size of a Wald test of 0.10 at a significance level of five per cent. For the covariate *Connection to Improved Sewerage* the F-statistic reads 30.54. Note that the two instruments are reduced to one in the Wooldridge procedure, namely the predicted value of the instrumented connection indicator.

[116] Whenever I write about significance in the following and if not indicated otherwise, he refers to statistical significance at conventional levels.

[117] The IV-Probit estimator obtains a p-value of 0.0448 for *Connection to Piped Water* respectively 0.0613 for *Connection to Improved Sewerage*.

[118] For the instrumented covariate *Connection to Piped Water* the Cragg-Donald Wald F-statistic is 36.78 compared to a Stock-Yogo critical reference value of 16.38, with the same conditions applying as above. For the covariate *Connection to Improved Sewerage* the F-statistic reads 29.90. The IV-Probit estimator obtains a p-value of 0.0121 for *Connection to Piped Water* respectively 0.0006 for *Connection to Improved Sewerage*.

[119] For the instrumented covariate *Connection to Piped Water* the Cragg-Donald Wald F-statistic is 10.47 compared to a Stock-Yogo critical reference value of 8.75, but only at a desired size of a Wald test of 0.20 (at a significance level of five per cent). For the covariate *Connection to Improved Sewerage* the F-statistic reads 8.08, compared to a reference value of 7.25 at a desired size of the Wald test of 0.25. 2SLS obtains a p-value of 0.0539 for *Connection to Piped Water,* and 0.0056 for *Connection to Improved Sewerage*, respectively regressed on two instruments.

[120] For the instrumented covariate *Connection to Piped Water* – and now three instead of two instruments – the Cragg-Donald Wald F-statistic is 91.19 compared to a Stock-Yogo critical reference value of 13.91 at a desired size of a Wald test of 0.05 (at a significance level of five per cent). For *Connection to Improved*

Cleanser not much does change. Including only two of the three instruments leads to lower F-statistics, as before. With the full set of three instruments, though, validity is strongly supported.[121] The assumption of exogeneity still cannot be defended based on the Sargan-Hansen test, interestingly even less so when including the third instrument.[122]

When looking at the fifth and last outcome of interest – *Frequency of Latrine-Cleaning* – the pattern remains the same as with the two continuous expenditure variables before: validity can better be supported when including three instrumental variables, while the statistical evidence raising doubts about exogeneity is further diminished.[123]

The instruments chosen can be shown to be correlated with the decision to connect households to the piped water network respectively additionally to the sewerage network, while most likely not having an influence on probability of water treatment within the household or one of the other outcomes. I judge that none of the three instrumental variables can in any way be linked on grounds of rational argumentation with the outcome variables, as no transmission channels appear conceivable. Still, the difficulties to reject endogeneity of the instruments based on statistical tests create some concerns that the exclusion restriction might not be fulfilled. The results of the IV estimations therefore should be regarded with some caution.

While the instruments are employed in this analysis also with a linear-binary and a simultaneous maximum likelihood estimator (MLE) as well as with a two-stage Probit bootstrap (2SPrB) procedure,

---

Sewerage, the F-statistic reads 83.71. 2SLS obtains a p-value of 0.0046 for *Connection to Piped Water* and 0.0036 for *Connection to Improved Sewerage,* respectively regressed on three instruments.

[121] For the instrumented covariate *Connection to Piped Water* the Cragg-Donald Wald F-statistic is 12.01 compared to a Stock-Yogo critical reference value of 11.59 at a desired size of a Wald test of 0.15 (at a significance level of five per cent), for two instruments. When including the third instrument the F-statistic rises to 84.27, which exceed the reference value of 13.91 for a Wald test size of 0.05. For *Connection to Improved Sewerage* and two instruments, the F-statistic reads 5.98, which is not even sufficient for a Wald test size of 0.25. When including the third instrument, the F-statistic rises to 77.59.

[122] 2SLS obtains a p-value of 0.0984 for *Connection to Piped Water* and 0.0237 for *Connection to Improved Sewerage,* respectively regressed on two instruments. When including the third instrument, the numbers change to 0.0012 and 0.0013, respectively.

[123] For the instrumented covariate *Connection to Piped Water* the Cragg-Donald Wald F-statistic is 9.98 compared to a Stock-Yogo critical reference value of 8.75 at a desired size of a Wald test of 0.20 (at a significance level of five per cent), for two instruments. When including the third instrument the F-statistic rises to 92.48, which exceed the reference value of 13.91 for a Wald test size of 0.05. For *Connection to Improved Sewerage* and two instruments, the F-statistic reads 6.76, which is not even sufficient for a Wald test size of 0.25. When including the third instrument, the F-statistic rises to 84.00. 2SLS obtains a p-value of 0.0995 for *Connection to Piped Water* and 0.07984for *Connection to Improved Sewerage,* respectively regressed on two instruments. When including the third instrument, the numbers change to 0.0021 and 0.0034, respectively.

the two-stage IV estimation shall serve as example to explain the mode of operation. For the first stage envision a linear probability model taking the form

$$\hat{C}_{ij} = \alpha_{i1} + \beta'_{i1}H'_j + \gamma'_{i1}E'_j + \delta'_{i1}Z'_j + \mu_{ij} \qquad (C.1)$$

where $\hat{C}_{ij}$ indicates the predicted connection status i (piped water, sewerage) of each household j (C stands for Connection). The dependent variable is estimated based on a vector of characteristics of the head of the household (H stands for Household Head Characteristics), a vector of characteristics of the household itself as a whole (E stands for Environment) including location and ICT exposure measures, and a vector composed of the set of instrumental variables (Z stands for Instruments). The constant is indicated by α_1; β_1, γ_1 and δ_1 stand for the respective coefficients of the vector variables of the first stage (subscript 1 stands for first stage). The error term μ_j varies non-systematically over the observation units so that I can write the conditional expectation function

$$E[\mu_j \mid H'_j, E'_j, Z'_j] = 0 \qquad (C.2)$$

In the second stage, I plug the predicted connection status $\hat{C}_j$ estimated in equation (1) into the model estimating the dependent variable of interest. It takes the form

$$O_{dj} = \alpha_2 + \beta'_2H'_j + \gamma'_2E'_j + \delta_{i2}\hat{C}_{ij} + \varepsilon_j \qquad (C.3)$$

with O_{dj} marking the reported behaviour of the household. O stands for Outcome; subscript d (which stands for Dependent Variable) indicates whether the outcome estimated is 1) probability of treatment of drinking water, 2) probability of using cleanser when washing hands, 3) logarithmised per capita spending on soap or 4) a combination of soap and laundry detergent, or 5) the frequency of latrine-cleaning. The other covariate vectors remain the same, the coefficients now marked with subscript 2 for the second stage. α_2 represents the constant, ε_j a non-systematic error term so that – equivalent to equation (2) – I can write the conditional expectation function as

$$E[\varepsilon_j \mid H'_j, E'_j, \hat{C}_{ij}] = 0 \qquad (C.4)$$

The fact that both the dependent variable as well as the main explanatory variable are binary requires application of special estimators when trying to control for endogeneity. The choice of the appropriate estimator is not straightforward. In the literature one can find an array of methods applied. Each one comes with its assets and drawbacks, and no consensus on best practice has emerged yet. Holm and Arendt (2012) state that, in opposition to "models with continuous endogenous repressors no simple consistent two-stage methods exist in the dummy endogenous model". They point out that 2SLS and Probit models will yield diverging estimates if something else

than average effects are calculated, or in presence of outliers. Rees *et al.* (2001) use various methods as alternatives to a standard single-equation Probit estimator in order to allow for possible endogeneity issues. These include maximum likelihood bivariate Probit as well as 2SLS instrumental variable procedures. On the other hand, Angrist (2001) argues that nonlinear limited dependent variables (LDV, as for example a binary positive outcome variable) models might only *appear* to present particular difficulties regarding endogenous variables. He purports that causal inference in presence of LDV outcomes is similar to that of continuous outcomes. At least when there are no or "sparse and discrete" covariates, linear estimators are "no less appropriate for LDVs than for other kinds of dependent variables", he states.

In consideration of this lack of a widely accepted guideline I rely upon application of four estimation procedures to control for endogeneity. This allows me to confidently peg and delineate the conjectured range of coefficient size of the regressors. Besides a single-stage Probit estimator I deploy the following instrumental variable procedures in the analysis at hand: 1) a particular form of the bivariate Probit regression, 2) a two-stage Probit bootstrap regression, 3) a linear-binary regression (IV-Probit) combined with a range-check; and as an entirely linear procedure 4) two-stage least squares regression following a scheme as proposed by Wooldridge (2010). Below, these four procedures are considered one by one, with a focus on the less commonly used bivariate Probit estimator.

1) *Bivariate Probit:* Greene (2012) suggests that a model with an endogenous binary regressor can be treated analogously to a selection problem. The two-step procedure developed by Heckman (1978, see also Heckman, 1979, and Terza, 1986) is deemed inappropriate for application with a Probit model by Freedman and Sekhon (2010), as it is assessed to frequently compound bias. Also it is recognized to be inferior to maximum-likelihood procedures. They argue that under "ordinary circumstances, the two-step-correction should not be used in Probit response models" because it often increases bias. Carrasco (2001) chooses a bivariate Probit (otherwise also called Biprobit) model to avoid the "inappropriateness of the standard instrumental variable method for analysing the relationship between two endogenous discrete variables" in light of endogeneity. Chiburis, Das and Lokshin (2011) find that Biprobit outperforms two-stage instrumental estimators for sample sizes smaller than 5000, and when probability of treatment is close to the bounds of 0 and 1. They also demonstrate that the MLE procedure allows calculating Average Treatment Effects (ATE).

This motivates the application of a simultaneous estimation procedure, namely the bivariate Probit (Biprobit) estimator. The Biprobit procedure[124] subdivides into three options, which fulfil different functions. The regular bivariate Probit regression (BP) is according to Hardin (2012) suitable "for models where the two dependent variables depend on the same list of independent variables and are correlated". The Seemingly Unrelated Biprobit regression (SUR BP) is applied when the dependent variables of two equations "may not depend on the same list of independent variables, but are still correlated", while the nested Probit regression is used "where the outcome of one equation depends on the outcome of the other equation" (*ibid.*). The appropriate application in this study – in order to instrument a binary and potentially endogenous regressor in combination with a binary regressand – is a nested (or recursive, a label more commonly used in the literature) version of the SUR BP. I refer to it in the following as RSUR BP. Park (2010) shows how to correctly[125] formulate this RSUR BP model. Biprobit models assume that the error terms of the (simultaneously estimated) equations are independent and identically distributed (see Greene, 2012). Independence of the error terms and the instrumental variables is assumed.

The Biprobit estimators do not come without drawbacks, though. It is not appropriate when more than one regressor is endogenous, or when an endogenous regressor interacts with an exogenous one. The necessary assumptions regarding functional form and distributional considerations are strong compared to those of other estimators.

The application of the Biprobit estimator requires two assumptions to be fulfilled. First, the variance of the covariates must be sufficient (Dupas, 2011). The more restrictive assumption is the second: the errors are assumed to be "distributed bivariate standard normal" (Davis *et al.*, 2011); otherwise the identification by functional form is problematic. This assumption can be tested using the Murphy score test. In context of this study it turns out that the null hypotheses of bivariate standard normal distribution is rejected for all tested specifications except for two cases where the probability of drinking water treatment is regressed on connection to improved sewerage (test statistics are available on request). The null is rejected for all Biprobit specifications regressing the probability of cleanser use on any of the connection covariates; and for all those regressing the probability of treatment of drinking water on connection to piped water. I therefore refrain from considering the

---

[124] For details regarding the Biprobit estimator also refer to Maddala (1983) pp. 122-123 and Greene (2012), section 17.5, pp. 738 *et sqq*.

[125] The correct STATA coding scheme presents oneself as *biprobit (y = w x1-xn) (w = z x1-xn)*, with y denoting the binary outcome, x1-xn the exogenous regressors, w the potentially endogenous binary regressor, and z the instrumental variable or set of variables.

Biprobit to be a suitable estimator, but for purposes of documentation report the estimation results in Appendix C.6 (columns labelled SUR BP, in Table C.11, Table C.12, Table C.15, and Table C.16).

2) *Two-stage Probit bootstrap (2SPrB)*: an alternative estimation approach[126] employed is similar to that used by Noe and Rieckmann (2013). The difference is that I chose the Probit estimator for both stages in the study at hand; instead of employing Negative Binomial estimator for the first stage and a Probit estimator for the second. In the first stage the endogenous binary variable (henceforth abbreviated EBV in this study, here the connection dummy) is regressed on the exogenous covariates. In the second stage the outcome is regressed on the predicted value of the EBV and the exogenous covariates. I employ bootstrapping[127] to accurately calculate the standard errors, which otherwise would in tendency be understated.

3) *Linear-Binary (IV-Probit)*: I include the IV-Probit estimator for purpose of comparison, while verifying[128] upfront that the predicted value of the EBV regressed on instrumental variables and exogenous covariates is not far beyond the lower and upper bounds of 0 and 1. The maximum-likelihood option is preferred over the two-step option (*i.e.* the minimum chi-squared estimator introduced by Newey, 1987) as no convergence problems are encountered, and is superior in terms of efficiency. Note that some authors regard combining a linear model in the first stage with a nonlinear model in the second stage not to be appropriate when the endogenous explanatory variable is discrete (see, for example, Dong and Lewbel, 2012). Adkins (2009) point out (abbreviating IV-Probit to IVP) that the "bias of IVP is substantial when instruments are weak". Angrist and Pischke (2008) explain that the IV-Probit estimator can, but does not have to be, superior to a 2SLS approach.

4) *Wooldridge Procedure (W2SLS)*: the two-stage least squares instrumental variable procedure (see Turkington and Bowden, 1988, and Angrist and Krueger, 2001) may not be appropriate when the dependent variable is binary (see Newey, 1987). 2SLS allows to estimate "local average causal effects" (LATE, abbreviated alternatively ATT for Average Treatment effect on the Treated – see Angrist and Pischke, 2008), but may be biased and inferior to MLE when handling small samples. Wooldridge (2010)[129] nonetheless proposes a three-step IV procedure to estimate the Average

---

[126] This approach is based on an idea verbally suggested by Chris Müris.
[127] The number of iterations chosen is 10,000. This is way beyond the 500 iterations used, for instance, by Bernheim *et al.* (2001), and allows confident estimation of the standard errors.
[128] The two-stage IV-Probit procedure is here combined with an upstream range-check step using Ordinary Least Squares (OLS). This approach is based on a verbal suggestion given by Stephan Klasen.
[129] See procedure 21.1, pp. 939 *et seqq.*

Treatment Effect (ATE), combining a Probit with a 2SLS regression. He advocates first regressing the EBV on the set of exogenous covariates and the instrument, then in a second step predicting the value of the EBV. In a third step, he then regresses the outcome on the set of exogenous covariates and the EBV instrumented with its predicted value.

C.5 Robustness checks in context of mapping hygiene habits

Spending on soap and laundry detergent

This section deals with the first two out of three[130] dependent variables that I deem to serve as alternative proxies of hygiene behaviour, thus supplementing *Probability of Cleanser Use*. These are 1) *Spending on Soap*, and 2) *Spending on Cleanser* (again referring to a combination of soap and detergent). Although there is no direct connection of expenses[131] for soap and laundry detergent with hygiene conditions within a household, the volume[132] of cleanser purchased allows deriving conclusions about which importance the household head attaches to matters of cleanliness of bodies and clothing. As the coefficients of the fitted models provide a very similar picture for both dependent variables, I discuss only the first one (*Spending on Soap*) here in detail. Regression tables for the second dependent variable *Spending on Cleanser* are displayed in the results appendix C.6 (see Table C.23 to Table C.24 and Table C.29). The role of a few explanatory variables slightly differs for the two dependent variables. These deviating cases I discuss below following the paragraph dealing with descriptive statistics.

In the mountainous region, mean spending on soap of households (see Table C.4 for descriptive statistics) is about six percentage points higher in the group connected to piped water than in the one additionally connected to improved sewerage, while both report between 13 (sewerage) to 19 (water) percentage points higher spending compared to the control group.

Table C.4: Mean spending (per capita, in YER) on soap by location and connection status

Connection	Mountain Project (YER)	N	SD	Mountain Control (YER)	N	SD	Coastal Project (YER)	N	SD	Coastal Control (YER)	N	SD
None	71.97	331	70.93	71.88	242	76.76	-	-	-	55.46	429	64.17
Piped Water	91.38	169	88.52	-	-	-	75.00	120	80.97	-	-	-
Sewerage	85.14	243	79.53	-	-	-	82.21	674	88.62	-	-	-

N over all connection groups and locations: 2208

Note: no households are connected to piped water or improved sewerage in the control towns. All households in the sample are connected in the coastal project town. Values capped at 500 YER per capita to exclude industrial use.

---

[130] The third alternative proxy is the dependent variable Frequency of Latrine Cleaning, addressed in the next section.

[131] Expenses may be driven by quantities purchased as well as by local prices. I assume that prices for soap as well as for detergent – each being products of quite uniform quality – do neither differ much within the project respectively control towns, nor between them. Therefore the level of expenses in a given household serves as indicator which quantity of the product was purchased, and which I assume to be a measure comparable over households from the whole sample.

[132] I expect households with more members to consume more cleanser than others. This is controlled for in several specifications.

In the coastal plain the positions of the two connected groups switch, with those connected to improved sewerage reporting to spend about seven percentage points more than the one connected to piped water only, and about 27 percentage points more than the control group. When combining spending on soap and laundry detergent, the group connected to improved sewerage consistently for both topographic regions reports higher spending than that connected to piped water, which in turn reports higher spending than the control group. There is one exception: in the mountains, the in-town control group reports lower spending than the households in the control town – see Table C.3 in Appendix C.3.

To interpret the coefficients correctly, one must take into account that the dependent variable is logarithmised spending. This means the coefficients have to be exponentiated before they can be interpreted in terms of percentage changes.[133] For example the coefficients of the OLS estimator for the covariate connection to *Piped Water* ranges from 0.211 to 0.311, which corresponds to a percentage effect of between around 23.5 and 36.5 per cent for a one-unit change (which in this case is the step from 0, indicating no connection, and 1, indicating connection).

The overview table is structured as accustomed: I oppose the two covariates of main interest in specifications (1) to (6) in Table C.5 below. Table C.17 to Table C.20 in Appendix C.6 display the estimated marginal effects for complementary specifications. As above I split the tables by main explanatory variables of interest, specifications vary media exposure. Results of alternative specifications including location, education and household composition variables, and the 2SLS estimator (Table C.19 and Table C.20) as well as results of first stages (see Table C.29) are presented in the same appendix. The coefficient of determination of the models ranges from seven to eleven per cent.

The amount of money spent by a household on soap is correlated with nine variables or groups of variables, for which I estimate coefficients statistically significant at conventional levels.

The most influential covariate with a positive sign of the coefficient is – following the interaction term of gender and education, which I discuss below – the *Region* a household is located in, with spending being roughly 40 per cent higher in the mountainous region compared to the coastal plain, keeping all other covariates stable. Estimated effect sizes I give as approximate percentages in

---

[133] A one-unit increase of the regressor must be interpreted differently for continuous and dummy regressors. For the former, the regressand in its non-logarithmised form changes by (coefficient size times 100) per cent. For the latter, the percental change of the regressand in its non-logarithmised form can be approximated by using the exponential function: [exp(coefficient size) minus one] times 100 per cent.

parentheses. In roughly descending order of estimated absolute coefficient sizes the other covariates with the same sign comprise: exposure to *ICT* (22.4 to 39.2%) with *Television* having the largest and *Web* access as the single exemption no effect at all, connection to *Piped Water* (23.5 to 36.5%), presence of a *Water Storage Tank* (19.9 to 28.5%), connection to *Improved Sewerage*[134] (16.2 to19.7%), *Assets* (8.6 to 16.1%), and *Symptom Occurrence* (10%).

Covariates with a negative effect are: the *Dependency Ratio* (the difference between the two extreme bounds – no dependent members in a household on the one hand, and the entire household being composed of them on the other – having an effect of between -44 and -56 per cent), location in the *Coastal Control* town (-32.2 to -47.8 per cent compared to the *Mountain Control* town), location in the *Coastal Project* town (-22.0 to -36.9%), and the *Age* of the household head (appearing to decrease expenditure by -0.4 to -0.6 per cent with each additional year of age).

No correlation at conventional levels of statistical significance I find for location in the *Mountainous Project* town compared to the *Mountainous Control* town, *Disease Awareness*, *Training* experience, or for characteristics of the household head as *Gender* and *Marital Status*. Interestingly, none of the alternative measures of education displays coefficients statistically significant at conventional levels – with one exception. The *Intermediate* (*i.e.*, between *Primary* and *Secondary*) *Level of Education* displays a negative coefficient (significant at the ten per cent level) ranging between -0.218 and -0.251 in those specifications which incorporate alternative household composition measures (*i.e.*, instead of the *Dependency Ratio* the *Number of Children*, *Elderly* or both). This corresponds to a change of -21.5 to -25.1 per cent compared to the reference category of no education. None of the other levels seems to have an influence.

When interacting[135] the *Gender* of the household head with the *Level of Education* the sign of intermediate education switches; and its sizable coefficient (1.013 to 1.036) becomes significant at the one per cent level. This corresponds to a percentage change of 175.4 to 181.8 per cent. The *Interaction Term* indicating *Gender* being male and education being *Intermediate* displays a negative coefficient, significant at the five per cent level, and ranging between -1.898 and -1.852. As *Gender* is an indicator variable taking the value 1 for male and 0 otherwise, the marginal effect of *Intermediate*

---

[134] Note that the explanatory variable connection to *Improved Sewerage* displays coefficients statistically significant at conventional levels in very few specifications.

[135] For reasons of space limitation, I do not display specifications including the interaction term. They are available upon request.

Table C.5: Spending on soap, connections compared, selected specifications

Specification	(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)	(6)
Estimator	OLS	OLS	OLS	OLS	OLS	OLS
Piped Water	0.370***	0.357***	0.310***	0.311***	0.317***	0.320***
	(0.062)	(0.078)	(0.072)	(0.082)	(0.073)	(0.082)
Sewerage		0.019		-0.003		-0.006
		(0.083)		(0.086)		(0.086)
HH Member trained	0.024	0.022	0.019	0.019	0.029	0.029
	(0.140)	(0.141)	(0.140)	(0.141)	(0.140)	(0.141)
Web Access	-0.174	-0.175	-0.176	-0.176	-0.178	-0.178
	(0.327)	(0.327)	(0.326)	(0.326)	(0.323)	(0.323)
Primary Edu	0.112	0.112	0.109	0.109		
	(0.074)	(0.074)	(0.075)	(0.075)		
Intermediate Edu	-0.150	-0.151	-0.156	-0.156		
	(0.131)	(0.132)	(0.132)	(0.132)		
Secondary Edu	0.135	0.133	0.123	0.123		
	(0.095)	(0.095)	(0.095)	(0.095)		
Tertiary Edu	0.131	0.130	0.119	0.119		
	(0.108)	(0.108)	(0.108)	(0.108)		
Edu. Durat° HH Head					0.007	0.007
					(0.006)	(0.006)
Age HH Head	-0.004*	-0.004*	-0.005*	-0.005*	-0.004	-0.004
	(0.002)	(0.002)	(0.002)	(0.002)	(0.002)	(0.002)
Gender HH Head	-0.085	-0.084	-0.076	-0.076	-0.070	-0.070
	(0.183)	(0.184)	(0.183)	(0.184)	(0.182)	(0.182)
Marital Status HH Head	0.004	0.003	0.003	0.004	0.013	0.013
	(0.151)	(0.152)	(0.151)	(0.152)	(0.150)	(0.151)
Disease Awareness	0.068	0.068	0.065	0.065	0.062	0.062
	(0.056)	(0.056)	(0.057)	(0.057)	(0.057)	(0.057)
Asset Index	0.160***	0.159***	0.161***	0.161***	0.163***	0.163***
	(0.041)	(0.041)	(0.041)	(0.041)	(0.041)	(0.041)
Dependency Ratio	-0.551***	-0.549***	-0.534***	-0.535***	-0.535***	-0.536***
	(0.149)	(0.150)	(0.149)	(0.150)	(0.149)	(0.150)
Water Tank present	0.220**	0.220**	0.232***	0.232***	0.231***	0.231***
	(0.086)	(0.086)	(0.085)	(0.086)	(0.085)	(0.086)
Region	0.449***	0.452***				
	(0.067)	(0.069)				
Mountain Treatment			-0.095	-0.094	-0.096	-0.096
			(0.076)	(0.077)	(0.076)	(0.077)
Coastal Treatment			-0.446***	-0.445***	-0.449***	-0.447***
			(0.107)	(0.114)	(0.107)	(0.115)
Coastal Control			-0.601***	-0.601***	-0.603***	-0.602***
			(0.107)	(0.107)	(0.106)	(0.107)
Constant	3.228***	3.227***	3.755***	3.755***	3.729***	3.728***
	(0.200)	(0.201)	(0.212)	(0.212)	(0.211)	(0.211)
Sample Size	2262	2262	2262	2262	2262	2262
Adj. R²	0.071	0.071	0.072	0.071	0.071	0.070

Robust standard errors in parentheses. Levels of statistical significance: * p<0.10, ** p<0.05, *** p<0.01

education in combination with the *Gender* being male has to be calculated[136] based on the sum of the education and interaction term coefficients (-0.816 to -0.885). This corresponds to a remarkable percentage change of -55.8 to -58.7 per cent. It cannot be entirely clarified why the household head being male and having completed an intermediate level of education appears more than halving the spending on soap compared with that of female household heads, ceteris paribus.

A similar picture I find for spending on cleanser when defined broader, as a combination of soap and detergent. An overview is given in Table C.21 below. Table C.21 to Table C.24 and Table C.29 in Appendix C.6 are complementary. A few changes arise: exposure to *ICT* gains in importance with estimated effects ranging between 25.7 per cent (*Landline* connection) to doubling (*Television Set*). *Training* comes in with an effect ranging between 42.2 and 54.0%. *Symptom Occurrence* is higher correlated (16 to 18%) and more often statistically significant at conventional levels. The coefficient of *Intermediate* education is now statistically significant at the ten per cent (in one case at the five per cent) level in more specifications, while the *Interaction Term* no longer is. Connection to *Piped Water* is significant only occasionally and at the one per cent level, while connection to *Improved Sewerage* appears to lose its importance altogether. Presence of a *Water Storage Tank* and possession of a *Radio* broadcasting receiver seem no longer to be influential.

As before, I test for robustness of the results by estimating different specifications. On top of that, I chose two dependent variables, defining it first narrow (soap only) and then broader (cleanser, *i.e.* soap and detergent). Within each of these two cases, the estimations are robust over all specifications for almost all of the explanatory variables regarding levels of statistical significance, direction of sign and relative coefficient size. In addition, over different specifications, the absolute coefficient sizes remain stable. Including alternative measures for education – *Duration* and *Literacy* instead of *Level* – and of household composition – *Number of Children*, *Elderly* or both – does not change the picture. Comparing the estimated coefficients of the explanatory variables for both dependent variables shows that they are of similar size and mostly display the same relative order. The main difference between the narrow and the broader defined models are the entry of *Training* experience and the exit of presence of a *Water Storage Tank* as supposable determinants.

---

[136] Note that for regressing the dependent variable Spending on Soap the OLS estimator is used. Thus the procedure introduced by Ai and Norton (2003); and used, for example, by Dreher *et al.* (2010) – analysing marginal effects of interaction terms in Probit regressions by means of graphs – does not apply here.

Table C.6: Spending on cleanser, connections compared, selected specifications

Specification	(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)	(6)
Estimator	OLS	OLS	OLS	OLS	OLS	OLS
Piped Water	0.284***	0.233***	0.141*	0.125	0.149**	0.136
	(0.070)	(0.082)	(0.073)	(0.083)	(0.074)	(0.083)
Sewerage		0.073		0.030		0.025
		(0.084)		(0.086)		(0.086)
HH Member trained	0.440***	0.433***	0.430***	0.427***	0.438***	0.436***
	(0.104)	(0.105)	(0.104)	(0.105)	(0.104)	(0.105)
Web Access	-0.337	-0.336	-0.335	-0.335	-0.344	-0.344
	(0.363)	(0.364)	(0.362)	(0.362)	(0.359)	(0.359)
Primary Edu	0.048	0.047	0.044	0.044		
	(0.081)	(0.081)	(0.081)	(0.081)		
Intermediate Edu	-0.195	-0.201	-0.209	-0.211		
	(0.148)	(0.148)	(0.148)	(0.149)		
Secondary Edu	0.042	0.038	0.024	0.023		
	(0.102)	(0.102)	(0.103)	(0.103)		
Tertiary Edu	-0.008	-0.012	-0.027	-0.028		
	(0.119)	(0.119)	(0.120)	(0.120)		
Edu. Durat° HH Head					-0.000	-0.000
					(0.006)	(0.006)
Age HH Head	-0.009***	-0.009***	-0.009***	-0.009***	-0.009***	-0.009***
	(0.003)	(0.003)	(0.003)	(0.003)	(0.003)	(0.003)
Gender HH Head	-0.060	-0.055	-0.043	-0.041	-0.040	-0.039
	(0.190)	(0.191)	(0.190)	(0.191)	(0.190)	(0.190)
Marital Status HH Head	0.093	0.088	0.088	0.086	0.090	0.089
	(0.155)	(0.156)	(0.155)	(0.156)	(0.154)	(0.155)
Disease Awareness	0.261***	0.262***	0.258***	0.259***	0.258***	0.258***
	(0.061)	(0.061)	(0.062)	(0.061)	(0.062)	(0.061)
Asset Index	0.190***	0.189***	0.193***	0.192***	0.192***	0.192***
	(0.045)	(0.045)	(0.045)	(0.045)	(0.045)	(0.045)
Dependency Ratio	-0.623***	-0.614***	-0.600***	-0.597***	-0.602***	-0.600***
	(0.165)	(0.166)	(0.165)	(0.166)	(0.166)	(0.166)
Water Tank present	0.071	0.069	0.088	0.086	0.085	0.084
	(0.092)	(0.092)	(0.091)	(0.092)	(0.091)	(0.092)
Region	0.506***	0.517***				
	(0.071)	(0.074)				
Mountain Treatment			-0.014	-0.017	-0.015	-0.017
			(0.073)	(0.074)	(0.074)	(0.075)
Coastal Treatment			-0.383***	-0.394***	-0.384***	-0.393***
			(0.108)	(0.115)	(0.109)	(0.115)
Coastal Control			-0.649***	-0.651***	-0.645***	-0.647***
			(0.115)	(0.116)	(0.115)	(0.115)
Constant	4.219***	4.215***	4.762***	4.766***	4.735***	4.739***
	(0.228)	(0.229)	(0.240)	(0.240)	(0.238)	(0.238)
Sample Size	1992	1992	1992	1992	1992	1992
Adj. R²	0.077	0.077	0.078	0.078	0.078	0.078

Robust standard errors in parentheses. Levels of statistical significance: * p<0.10, ** p<0.05, *** p<0.01

I use 2SLS to control for endogeneity for the dependent variables referring to expenditures for soap and cleanser. Levels of statistical significance and coefficient signs are mostly consistent with all of the basic OLS models for most of the explanatory and control variables. The same issues apply as mentioned above and in Appendix C.4 regarding the exogeneity assumption, so endogeneity – while I do not assume it to be likely – cannot be ruled out.

Frequency of latrine-cleaning

This section deals with the third alternative proxy of hygiene habits, employed to check for the robustness of the findings for the dependent variable *Probability of Cleanser Use*: the frequency, with which households use to clean their latrines. Descriptive statistics do not show striking differences between connection groups or topographic regions (see Table C.7).

Table C.7: Mean frequency of latrine-cleaning by location and connection status

Connection	Mountain Project	N	SD	Mountain Control	N	SD	Coastal Project	N	SD	Coastal Control	N	SD
None	7.86	355	3.28	7.77	291	2.64	-	-	-	7.19	401	3.30
Piped Water	8.12	197	3.57	-	-	-	7.65	124	2.92	-	-	-
Sewerage	7.80	268	3.39	-	-	-	8.60	713	3.28	-	-	-

N over all connection groups and locations: 2349

Note: no households are connected to piped water or improved sewerage in the control towns. All households in the sample are connected in the coastal project town.

Households tend to report the frequency of cleaning to be daily. Frequency is reported in times per week, and the modus is seven. This may either reflect a widespread habit to actually conduct cleaning daily, or the Hawthorne effect mentioned above in the data section.

An overview is given in Table C.8 below. Table C.25 to Table C.28 and Table C.29 in the results appendix are complementary. The coefficient of determination of the models ranges from three to five per cent.

The frequency of latrine cleaning is positively correlated with nine explanatory variables or groups of variables, which are endowed with coefficients statistically significant at conventional levels. Coefficient size ranges I show in parentheses. Due to the employment of a linear estimator, I can interpret them straightforward as percentage effects. For instance, a coefficient sized 0.834 corresponds to an increase of frequency of latrine cleaning of about 83 per cent, ceteris paribus.

Table C.8: Latrine-cleaning frequency, connections compared, selected specifications

Specification	(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)	(6)
Estimator	OLS	OLS	OLS	OLS	OLS	OLS
Piped Water	0.757***	0.606***	0.478**	0.420*	0.476**	0.419*
	(0.141)	(0.208)	(0.219)	(0.254)	(0.217)	(0.252)
Sewerage		0.232		0.125		0.123
		(0.212)		(0.212)		(0.212)
HH Member trained	0.987**	0.962**	0.967**	0.956**	0.959**	0.947**
	(0.468)	(0.466)	(0.469)	(0.468)	(0.469)	(0.467)
Web Access	-0.052	-0.061	-0.055	-0.060	-0.006	-0.011
	(0.839)	(0.840)	(0.843)	(0.843)	(0.849)	(0.849)
Primary Edu	-0.049	-0.051	-0.060	-0.060		
	(0.179)	(0.179)	(0.179)	(0.179)		
Intermediate Edu	-0.081	-0.094	-0.115	-0.119		
	(0.267)	(0.268)	(0.270)	(0.270)		
Secondary Edu	-0.142	-0.156	-0.189	-0.194		
	(0.209)	(0.210)	(0.210)	(0.211)		
Tertiary Edu	0.330	0.317	0.278	0.275		
	(0.259)	(0.258)	(0.260)	(0.260)		
Edu. Durat° HH Head					-0.001	-0.002
					(0.014)	(0.014)
Age HH Head	0.004	0.004	0.003	0.003	0.004	0.004
	(0.006)	(0.006)	(0.006)	(0.006)	(0.006)	(0.006)
Gender HH Head	0.082	0.093	0.125	0.129	0.117	0.121
	(0.303)	(0.303)	(0.302)	(0.302)	(0.304)	(0.304)
Marital Status HH Head	0.144	0.134	0.143	0.137	0.148	0.143
	(0.250)	(0.249)	(0.250)	(0.250)	(0.250)	(0.250)
Disease Awareness	0.003	0.005	0.004	0.005	0.003	0.004
	(0.135)	(0.135)	(0.134)	(0.134)	(0.134)	(0.134)
Asset Index	0.604***	0.600***	0.614***	0.611***	0.622***	0.619***
	(0.106)	(0.106)	(0.106)	(0.106)	(0.106)	(0.106)
Dependency Ratio	0.253	0.282	0.321	0.335	0.343	0.356
	(0.303)	(0.304)	(0.303)	(0.304)	(0.305)	(0.306)
Water Tank present	0.499***	0.492***	0.553***	0.547***	0.569***	0.562***
	(0.173)	(0.173)	(0.174)	(0.174)	(0.173)	(0.173)
Region	-0.237	-0.197				
	(0.161)	(0.161)				
Mountain Treatment			-0.292	-0.309	-0.293	-0.310
			(0.243)	(0.241)	(0.242)	(0.240)
Coastal Treatment			0.360	0.305	0.375	0.320
			(0.316)	(0.315)	(0.318)	(0.317)
Coastal Control			-0.380	-0.390	-0.370	-0.381
			(0.240)	(0.239)	(0.239)	(0.239)
Constant	5.543***	5.518***	5.529***	5.545***	5.456***	5.471***
	(0.443)	(0.442)	(0.479)	(0.479)	(0.475)	(0.474)
Sample Size	2407	2407	2407	2407	2407	2407
Adj. R²	0.041	0.041	0.044	0.044	0.044	0.044

Robust standard errors in parentheses. Levels of statistical significance: * $p<0.10$, ** $p<0.05$, *** $p<0.01$

In roughly descending order of estimated coefficient size the covariates positively correlated are *Mean Education Duration* of adults in a household (strongly correlated with a coefficient of 1.071 to 1.115, but only when the covariate *Dependency Ratio* is included in the specification), *Training* experience (0.834 to 0.966), and the *Dependency Ratio* (0.663 to 0.667, only when *Mean Education Duration* of adults is included).

The next in line are connection to *Piped Water* (0.380 to 0.721), wealth reflected by the *Asset Index* (0.544 to 0.611, significant at the one per cent level), and location in the *Coastal Project* town (0.506, compared to reference category *Mountain Control* town, significant only in combination with connection to *Piped Water*, but not to *Improved Sewerage*).

Then follow connection to *Improved Sewerage* (0.581, only in combination with *Region*), presence of a *Water Storage Tank* (0.464 to 0.559, significant at the one per cent level), *Tertiary Level of Education* (0.453, compared to reference category no education, only when the covariate *Region* is included), and the three alternative measures of household composition (*Number of Household Members* with 0.046 to 0.047, *Number of Children* with 0.055, *Number of Children and Elderly* with 0.053 to 0.054).

On the other hand, *Frequency of Latrine-Cleaning* is negatively correlated with *Primary* (-0.857 to -0.861) and *Secondary Education* when the interaction term (*Level of Education* interacted with *Gender* of the household head, itself not significant) is included in the specification. Location in the *Coastal Control* town is negatively correlated, likewise (-0.425 to -0.449), though not significant at conventional levels in all but two specifications. Location in the *Mountainous Region* is statistically significant at the ten per cent level in merely one specification, with a coefficient size of -0.299; and on top is unstable regarding sign.

Obviously beside the point are some of the other covariates. These include *Age*, *Gender* and *Marital Status* of the household head, *Disease Awareness*, and location in the *Mountain Project* town, an indicator whether any *Soap* was bought[137] within a recall period of 30 days, exposure to *ICT* and – as briefly mentioned above – the *Interaction Term*.

The results I test for robustness following the same scheme as before, *i.e.* estimating different specifications. Coefficient signs, sizes and levels of statistical significance are largely consistent. Because biased (over-)reporting due to a Hawthorne cannot be dismissed, the findings of this

---

[137] This might give a clue about the importance attached by household members to cleanliness.

section should not be overrated, though. Nevertheless, they can be put into perspective with the findings for the antecedent hygiene habit regressands, and contribute to a more complete picture. 2SLS specifications reveal no critical indication of endogeneity issues, but are of limited informative value due to the concerns regarding exogeneity of the instruments.

In the following, I discuss the patterns of likely determinants of hygiene habits found for the four dependent variables (probability of *Use of Cleanser* for hand washing, *Spending on Soap* and on *Cleanser*, *Frequency of Latrine-Cleaning*) used to proxy those hygiene habits. The advance is analogical to the structure used above in the discussion of the findings for the dependent variable *Probability of Drinking Water Treatment*. First, I recall each of the theories laid down in the introduction. Then I assess the role of the respective covariate or group of covariates as a – potentially joint – determinant of the group of four dependent variables, with attention to sign and rank. Covariates whose correlation coefficients are never statistically significant at least at the ten per cent level I do not regard to be influential determinants.

Hypothesis 1b (connecting a household to piped water increases its likelihood of displaying hygiene habits) is consistently supported by the findings for each of the dependent variables. Connection to *Piped Water* ranks among the covariates with the most sizable influence, usually between third and fifth position. *Hypothesis 2b* (additional connection of a household to *Improved Sewerage* decreases its likelihood of displaying hygiene habits, but to a lesser extent than connection to piped water) can be supported as well. The correlation is positive for three out of four dependent variables, solely with *Spending on Cleanser* apparently not being determined by connection to *Improved Sewerage*. The covariate ranks lower than connection to *Piped Water* for all outcomes. *Hypothesis 3b* (those households in which at least one member participated in any type of hygiene *Training* in the past have a higher likelihood of displaying hygiene habits) is distinctly reinforced, with coefficients ranking between first and fifth position. Interestingly, *Training* experience appears to be the most important covariate for the outcome *Spending on Cleanser* including laundry detergent, while it seems to be irrelevant for *Spending on Soap*. *Hypothesis 4b* (those households with exposure to information and communication technology have a higher likelihood of displaying hygiene habits) is consistently supported, with the exception of the outcome *Frequency of Latrine-Cleaning*. For the latter, the coefficients never reach the ten per cent level of statistical significance. Please note that there is, in contrast to expectation, no evidence that access to the *World Wide Web* is a driver. Instead, those *ICT* measures that indicate possession of objects (*Television Set*, *Personal Computer*, *Satellite Dish*, *Radio* broadcasting receiver and *Mobile Phone*) make the impression to be. This gives room for doubt if the correlation does indeed map the influence of increased availability of

information, or rather depicts the wealth of the household. On the other hand, the correlation of connection to a phone *Landline* with the outcome variables softens this concern slightly, as I believe such a connection to be far less costly than purchase of electronic goods. Another source of reassurance is the fact that the *Asset Index* is used to control for wealth.

Hypothesis 5b (the more educated the head of the household is, the higher is the likelihood of the household members displaying hygiene habits) can neither be supported nor invalidated. Empirical evidence is mixed. It indicates a positive relationship of *Tertiary* (for the *Use of Cleanser* also of *Secondary*) *Education* on *Use of Cleanser* for hand washing on the one hand, and on *Frequency of Latrine-Cleaning* on the other. However, regarding the expenditure outcomes, no effect is revealed by the analysis, except for *Intermediate* education – the coefficients of which are negatively correlated with the outcomes.

The evidence regarding the control variables covering household composition is mixed. While the probability of *Use of Cleanser* and the *Spending on Soap* seem to be negatively and – with the coefficient in most specifications being the second largest – strongly influenced, the contrary appears to be the case for *Spending on Cleanser* and *Latrine-Cleaning Frequency*. Female headship does not seem to play an influential role. The age of the household head is also not fostering hygiene habits. For two of the outcomes, namely *Use of Cleanser* for hand washing and *Frequency of Latrine-Cleaning*, the coefficients never reach the ten per cent level of statistical significance. For both expenditure outcomes, a negative correlation – statistically significant at conventional levels up to the one per cent level – is estimated for most specifications. This is in line with my expectation of younger household heads being more prone to pursue hygiene habits, and contradicts the previous literature. Considering that income tends to increase with *Age*, the relationship between young age and spending might indeed be understated here, if income is not fully controlled for by the asset index. This latter control variable is consistently positively correlated with all dependent variables proxying hygiene habits. The coefficient usually ranks between sixth and ninth position in terms of relative size. At least one household member having suffered from water-related diseases in the recent past (*i.e., Illness History*) is positively correlated with the likelihood of displaying hygiene habits. Likewise, the covariate *Symptom Occurrence* is consistently positively correlated with the outcome variables.

C.6   Estimation results

Table C.9: Probability of drinking water treatment, piped water, ICT covariates

Specification	(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)
Estimator	Probit	Probit	Probit	Probit	Probit
Piped Water	0.055***	0.053***	0.054***	0.053***	0.052***
	(0.012)	(0.012)	(0.012)	(0.012)	(0.012)
Age HH Head	-0.000	-0.000	-0.000	-0.000	-0.000
	(0.000)	(0.000)	(0.000)	(0.000)	(0.000)
Gender HH Head	-0.045*	-0.044*	-0.044*	-0.050**	-0.044*
	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.024)
Marital Status HH Head	0.013	0.012	0.013	0.011	0.012
	(0.021)	(0.021)	(0.021)	(0.020)	(0.020)
Disease Awareness	0.007	0.006	0.007	0.005	0.005
	(0.011)	(0.011)	(0.011)	(0.011)	(0.011)
HH Member trained	0.104***	0.104***	0.102***	0.102***	0.106***
	(0.020)	(0.020)	(0.020)	(0.020)	(0.020)
Asset Index	0.040***	0.038***	0.038***	0.034***	0.036***
	(0.007)	(0.007)	(0.008)	(0.008)	(0.007)
Dependency Ratio	0.000	0.000	0.005	0.005	0.006
	(0.028)	(0.028)	(0.027)	(0.028)	(0.028)
Region	0.153***	0.153***	0.146***	0.149***	0.152***
	(0.016)	(0.016)	(0.016)	(0.016)	(0.016)
Water Tank present	-0.021	-0.022	-0.022	-0.021	-0.021
	(0.019)	(0.019)	(0.019)	(0.019)	(0.019)
TV present	0.009				
	(0.019)				
Sat. Dish present		0.019			
		(0.013)			
Radio present			0.025**		
			(0.011)		
GSM present				0.032**	
				(0.014)	
Landline Connection					0.028**
					(0.012)
Primary Edu	0.045***	0.044***	0.044***	0.045***	0.044***
	(0.014)	(0.014)	(0.014)	(0.014)	(0.014)
Intermediate Edu	0.011	0.009	0.009	0.012	0.010
	(0.023)	(0.023)	(0.023)	(0.023)	(0.023)
Secondary Edu	0.045**	0.043**	0.043**	0.044**	0.042**
	(0.018)	(0.018)	(0.018)	(0.018)	(0.018)
Tertiary Edu	0.046**	0.044**	0.042**	0.044**	0.043**
	(0.021)	(0.021)	(0.020)	(0.020)	(0.020)
Sample Size	2459	2459	2459	2459	2459
Pseudo R²	0.173	0.174	0.176	0.176	0.176

Average marginal effects displayed. Robust standard errors in parentheses. Levels of statistical significance: * $p<0.10$, ** $p<0.05$, *** $p<0.01$

Table C.10: Probability of drinking water treatment, sewerage, ICT covariates

Specification	(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)
Estimator	Probit	Probit	Probit	Probit	Probit
Piped Water	0.033**	0.032**	0.032**	0.032**	0.031**
	(0.015)	(0.015)	(0.015)	(0.015)	(0.015)
Sewerage	0.037**	0.036**	0.038**	0.037**	0.037**
	(0.015)	(0.015)	(0.015)	(0.015)	(0.015)
Age HH Head	-0.000	-0.000	-0.000	-0.000	-0.000
	(0.000)	(0.000)	(0.000)	(0.000)	(0.000)
Gender HH Head	-0.043*	-0.042*	-0.042*	-0.047*	-0.042*
	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.024)
Marital Status HH Head	0.011	0.010	0.011	0.009	0.010
	(0.021)	(0.021)	(0.021)	(0.021)	(0.021)
Disease Awareness	0.007	0.007	0.007	0.005	0.006
	(0.011)	(0.011)	(0.011)	(0.011)	(0.011)
HH Member trained	0.099***	0.098***	0.096***	0.097***	0.100***
	(0.020)	(0.020)	(0.020)	(0.020)	(0.020)
Asset Index	0.039***	0.038***	0.037***	0.034***	0.036***
	(0.007)	(0.007)	(0.008)	(0.008)	(0.007)
Dependency Ratio	0.004	0.004	0.009	0.009	0.010
	(0.028)	(0.028)	(0.028)	(0.028)	(0.028)
Region	0.160***	0.160***	0.153***	0.156***	0.159***
	(0.017)	(0.017)	(0.017)	(0.017)	(0.017)
Water Tank present	-0.021	-0.021	-0.022	-0.020	-0.020
	(0.019)	(0.019)	(0.019)	(0.019)	(0.019)
TV present	0.008				
	(0.019)				
Sat. Dish present		0.017			
		(0.013)			
Radio present			0.025**		
			(0.011)		
GSM present				0.031**	
				(0.014)	
Landline Connection					0.027**
					(0.012)
Primary Edu	0.044***	0.044***	0.044***	0.044***	0.044***
	(0.014)	(0.014)	(0.014)	(0.014)	(0.014)
Intermediate Edu	0.007	0.007	0.007	0.007	0.007
	(0.023)	(0.023)	(0.023)	(0.023)	(0.023)
Secondary Edu	0.040**	0.040**	0.040**	0.040**	0.040**
	(0.018)	(0.018)	(0.018)	(0.018)	(0.018)
Tertiary Edu	0.042**	0.042**	0.042**	0.042**	0.042**
	(0.020)	(0.020)	(0.020)	(0.020)	(0.020)
Sample Size	2459	2459	2459	2459	2459
Pseudo R²	0.177	0.178	0.180	0.180	0.180

Average marginal effects displayed. Robust standard errors in parentheses. Levels of statistical significance: * $p<0.10$, ** $p<0.05$, *** $p<0.01$

Table C.11: Probability of drinking water treatment, piped water, other specifications & estimators

Specification	(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)	(6)
Estimator	Probit	Probit	IV-Probit	SUR BP	2SLS	2SPrB
Piped Water	0.061***	0.060***	0.966***	0.054***	0.525***	0.092
	(0.013)	(0.014)	(0.286)	(0.017)	(0.172)	(0.694)
Age HH Head	-0.000	-0.001*	-0.002	-0.000	-0.002*	0.000
	(0.000)	(0.000)	(0.003)	(0.000)	(0.001)	(0.005)
Gender HH Head	-0.034	-0.022	-0.325*	-0.020*	-0.021	-0.054*
	(0.023)	(0.023)	(0.175)	(0.010)	(0.031)	(0.207)
Marital Status HH Head	0.007	0.013	0.138	0.005	0.022	0.016
	(0.020)	(0.020)	(0.151)	(0.008)	(0.027)	(0.174)
Disease Awareness	0.005	0.003	0.082	0.002	0.025	0.009
	(0.011)	(0.011)	(0.080)	(0.004)	(0.016)	(0.092)
Symptom Occurrence			0.064	0.004	-0.006	0.008
			(0.084)	(0.005)	(0.017)	(0.014)
HH Member trained	0.107***	0.103***	0.694***	0.042***	0.118***	0.116***
	(0.021)	(0.021)	(0.164)	(0.012)	(0.040)	(0.188)
Asset Index	0.039***	0.037***	0.281***	0.016***	0.035***	0.038***
	(0.007)	(0.007)	(0.053)	(0.004)	(0.011)	(0.057)
Dependency Ratio	-0.003	0.030	-0.007	-0.004	0.045	-0.004
	(0.027)	(0.029)	(0.205)	(0.011)	(0.036)	(0.242)
Mountain Treatment	0.035**	0.035**	0.005	0.014**	-0.115	0.031
	(0.016)	(0.016)	(0.178)	(0.007)	(0.073)	(0.305)
Coastal Treatment	-0.146***	-0.153***	-1.520***	-0.062***	-0.508***	-0.192**
	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.273)	(0.014)	(0.142)	(0.571)
Coastal Control	-0.072***	-0.073***	-0.492***	-0.030***		
	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.175)	(0.011)		
Water Tank present	-0.025	-0.028	-0.221	-0.010	-0.058***	-0.036
	(0.018)	(0.018)	(0.135)	(0.008)	(0.018)	(0.172)
TV and/or PC present						0.009
						(0.183)
Web Access	0.072**	0.077**	0.470*	0.030**	0.107*	
	(0.032)	(0.033)	(0.243)	(0.015)	(0.063)	
Edu. Durat° HH Head					-0.001	
					(0.002)	
Literacy HH Head	0.034**					
	(0.014)					
Mean Edu. Durat° Adults		0.095***				
		(0.030)				
Primary Edu			0.283***	0.018***		0.046**
			(0.110)	(0.006)		(0.129)
Intermediate Edu			0.062	0.004		0.009
			(0.193)	(0.009)		(0.224)
Secondary Edu			0.276**	0.020**		0.057**
			(0.132)	(0.008)		(0.180)
Tertiary Edu			0.242	0.020**		0.058**
			(0.150)	(0.009)		(0.192)
Sample Size	2459	2464	2393	2459	2029	2029
Pseudo R²	0.180	0.185				0.157

Average marginal effects displayed for non-linear models. Robust standard errors in parentheses; bootstrapped for 2SPrB. Levels of statistical significance: * $p<0.10$, ** $p<0.05$, *** $p<0.01$

Table C.12: Probability of drinking water treatment, sewerage, other specifications & estimators

Specification	(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)	(6)
Estimator	Probit	Probit	IV-Probit	SUR BP	2SLS	2SPrB
Piped Water	0.043***	0.042***	0.776*	0.044**	0.251***	-0.003
	(0.015)	(0.015)	(0.464)	(0.019)	(0.077)	(0.755)
Sewerage	0.043***	0.041***	0.096	0.017**	-0.019	0.072
	(0.015)	(0.016)	(0.240)	(0.007)	(0.028)	(0.420)
Age HH Head	-0.000	-0.001*	-0.002	-0.000	-0.000	0.000
	(0.000)	(0.000)	(0.004)	(0.000)	(0.001)	(0.005)
Gender HH Head	-0.033	-0.021	-0.336*	-0.019*	-0.032	-0.053*
	(0.023)	(0.023)	(0.177)	(0.011)	(0.025)	(0.210)
Marital Status HH Head	0.007	0.013	0.137	0.004	0.018	0.010
	(0.020)	(0.020)	(0.153)	(0.009)	(0.022)	(0.183)
Disease Awareness	0.006	0.005	0.076	0.003	0.012	0.006
	(0.011)	(0.011)	(0.080)	(0.004)	(0.013)	(0.089)
Symptom Occurrence			0.063	0.004	0.003	0.011
			(0.086)	(0.005)	(0.015)	(0.093)
HH Member trained	0.104***	0.099***	0.704***	0.041***	0.149***	0.115***
	(0.021)	(0.021)	(0.165)	(0.012)	(0.039)	(0.169)
Asset Index	0.040***	0.038***	0.283***	0.015***	0.039***	0.037***
	(0.007)	(0.007)	(0.053)	(0.004)	(0.010)	(0.056)
Dependency Ratio	0.001	0.033	-0.018	-0.002	0.008	-0.009
	(0.027)	(0.029)	(0.207)	(0.011)	(0.030)	(0.230)
Mountain Treatment	0.026	0.026	0.044	0.011	0.002	0.041
	(0.017)	(0.017)	(0.183)	(0.007)	(0.030)	(0.214)
Coastal Treatment	-0.166***	-0.170***	-1.464***	-0.071***	-0.273***	-0.175***
	(0.025)	(0.025)	(0.260)	(0.017)	(0.050)	(0.302)
Coastal Control	-0.075***	-0.076***	-0.514***	-0.032***		
	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.184)	(0.012)		
Water Tank present	-0.026	-0.028	-0.210	-0.010	-0.039***	-0.030
	(0.018)	(0.018)	(0.135)	(0.008)	(0.015)	(0.159)
TV and/or PC present						0.018
						(0.176)
Web Access			0.470*	0.028*	0.140**	
			(0.251)	(0.015)	(0.064)	
Edu. Durat° HH Head					0.002	
					(0.001)	
Literacy HH Head	0.034**					
	(0.014)					
Mean Edu. Durat° Adults		0.090***				
		(0.030)				
Primary Edu			0.296***	0.018***		0.050***
			(0.112)	(0.007)		(0.133)
Intermediate Edu			0.063	0.004		0.009
			(0.195)	(0.009)		(0.227)
Secondary Edu			0.304**	0.020**		0.067***
			(0.135)	(0.008)		(0.169)
Tertiary Edu			0.272*	0.020**		0.068**
			(0.154)	(0.009)		(0.190)
Sample Size	2459	2463	2393	2459	2029	2029
Pseudo R²	0.183	0.185				0.172

Average marginal effects displayed for non-linear models. Robust standard errors in parentheses; bootstrapped for 2SPrB . Levels of statistical significance: * p<0.10, ** p<0.05, *** p<0.01

Table C.13: Probability of cleanser use, piped water, ICT covariates

Specification	(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)
Estimator	Probit	Probit	Probit	Probit	Probit
Piped Water	0.121***	0.118***	0.122***	0.120***	0.116***
	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.024)
Age HH Head	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.001	0.000
	(0.001)	(0.001)	(0.001)	(0.001)	(0.001)
Gender HH Head	-0.001	-0.001	0.001	-0.006	-0.000
	(0.046)	(0.046)	(0.046)	(0.046)	(0.046)
Marital Status HH Head	-0.001	-0.000	0.000	-0.003	-0.002
	(0.040)	(0.040)	(0.040)	(0.040)	(0.040)
Disease Awareness	0.040**	0.038**	0.041**	0.038**	0.040**
	(0.017)	(0.017)	(0.017)	(0.017)	(0.017)
HH Member trained	0.091*	0.092*	0.089*	0.090*	0.098**
	(0.050)	(0.050)	(0.050)	(0.050)	(0.049)
Asset Index	0.040***	0.038***	0.039***	0.031**	0.032**
	(0.013)	(0.013)	(0.013)	(0.014)	(0.013)
Dependency Ratio	-0.195***	-0.197***	-0.190***	-0.189***	-0.183***
	(0.041)	(0.041)	(0.041)	(0.040)	(0.040)
Mountain Treatment	0.003	0.002	-0.001	-0.001	0.001
	(0.027)	(0.027)	(0.027)	(0.027)	(0.027)
Coastal Treatment	0.157***	0.153***	0.163***	0.161***	0.156***
	(0.035)	(0.035)	(0.035)	(0.035)	(0.035)
Coastal Control	0.224***	0.219***	0.223***	0.220***	0.219***
	(0.031)	(0.031)	(0.031)	(0.031)	(0.031)
Water Tank present	0.008	0.009	0.010	0.013	0.009
	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.024)
TV present	0.043*				
	(0.025)				
Sat. Dish present		0.048**			
		(0.019)			
Radio present			0.044**		
			(0.019)		
GSM present				0.048**	
				(0.020)	
Landline Connection					0.087***
					(0.022)
Primary Edu	-0.006	-0.008	-0.006	-0.005	-0.007
	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.024)
Intermediate Edu	0.052	0.051	0.053	0.054	0.050
	(0.039)	(0.039)	(0.039)	(0.038)	(0.038)
Secondary Edu	0.082***	0.079***	0.082***	0.081***	0.077***
	(0.028)	(0.029)	(0.028)	(0.028)	(0.028)
Tertiary Edu	0.098***	0.094***	0.096***	0.096***	0.091***
	(0.031)	(0.032)	(0.032)	(0.032)	(0.032)
Sample Size	2466	2466	2466	2466	2466
Pseudo R²	0.090	0.091	0.090	0.090	0.094

Average marginal effects displayed. Robust standard errors in parentheses. Levels of statistical significance: * $p<0.10$, ** $p<0.05$, *** $p<0.01$

Table C.14: Probability of cleanser use, sewerage, ICT covariates

Specification	(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)
Estimator	Probit	Probit	Probit	Probit	Probit
Piped Water	0.099***	0.096***	0.100***	0.098***	0.095***
	(0.027)	(0.027)	(0.027)	(0.027)	(0.027)
Sewerage	0.048*	0.047*	0.049*	0.049*	0.047*
	(0.027)	(0.027)	(0.027)	(0.027)	(0.027)
Age HH Head	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.001	0.000
	(0.001)	(0.001)	(0.001)	(0.001)	(0.001)
Gender HH Head	0.001	0.001	0.002	-0.005	0.001
	(0.046)	(0.046)	(0.046)	(0.046)	(0.046)
Marital Status HH Head	-0.004	-0.002	-0.002	-0.005	-0.005
	(0.040)	(0.040)	(0.040)	(0.040)	(0.040)
Disease Awareness	0.041**	0.038**	0.042**	0.038**	0.040**
	(0.017)	(0.017)	(0.017)	(0.017)	(0.017)
HH Member trained	0.084*	0.086*	0.083*	0.084*	0.091*
	(0.050)	(0.050)	(0.050)	(0.050)	(0.049)
Asset Index	0.039***	0.037***	0.038***	0.030**	0.031**
	(0.013)	(0.013)	(0.013)	(0.014)	(0.013)
Dependency Ratio	-0.189***	-0.191***	-0.184***	-0.183***	-0.178***
	(0.041)	(0.040)	(0.041)	(0.040)	(0.040)
Mountain Treatment	-0.004	-0.004	-0.007	-0.007	-0.005
	(0.027)	(0.027)	(0.027)	(0.027)	(0.027)
Coastal Treatment	0.137***	0.134***	0.142***	0.140***	0.137***
	(0.037)	(0.037)	(0.037)	(0.037)	(0.037)
Coastal Control	0.219***	0.215***	0.219***	0.216***	0.215***
	(0.031)	(0.031)	(0.031)	(0.031)	(0.031)
Water Tank present	0.006	0.007	0.007	0.010	0.007
	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.024)
TV present	0.042*				
	(0.025)				
Sat. Dish present		0.047**			
		(0.019)			
Radio present			0.043**		
			(0.019)		
GSM present				0.048**	
				(0.020)	
Landline Connection					0.086***
					(0.022)
Primary Edu	-0.007	-0.008	-0.006	-0.006	-0.008
	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.024)
Intermediate Edu	0.050	0.049	0.051	0.052	0.048
	(0.039)	(0.039)	(0.039)	(0.038)	(0.038)
Secondary Edu	0.080***	0.077***	0.080***	0.079***	0.075***
	(0.029)	(0.029)	(0.028)	(0.028)	(0.028)
Tertiary Edu	0.097***	0.093***	0.094***	0.094***	0.089***
	(0.031)	(0.032)	(0.032)	(0.032)	(0.032)
Sample Size	2466	2466	2466	2466	2466
Pseudo R²	0.091	0.092	0.091	0.092	0.095

Average marginal effects displayed. Robust standard errors in parentheses. Levels of statistical significance: * $p<0.10$, ** $p<0.05$, *** $p<0.01$

Table C.15: Probability of cleanser use, piped water, other specifications & estimators

Specification Estimator	(1) Probit	(2) Probit	(3) Probit	(4) Probit	(5) Probit	(6) IV-Probit	(7) SUR BP	(8) 2SLS	(9) 2SPrB
Piped Water	0.116***	0.124***	0.123***	0.130***	0.125***	0.877***	0.218***	0.292	-0.082
	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.203)	(0.045)	(0.193)	(0.557)
Age HH Head	0.001	-0.000	-0.001	0.001	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.001	0.001
	(0.001)	(0.001)	(0.001)	(0.001)	(0.001)	(0.002)	(0.000)	(0.001)	(0.003)
Gender HH Head	-0.015	0.019	0.033	0.028	0.016	0.012	-0.002	0.018	0.018
	(0.046)	(0.046)	(0.045)	(0.045)	(0.046)	(0.148)	(0.022)	(0.046)	(0.174)
Marital Status HH Head	-0.003	-0.019	-0.013	-0.021	-0.003	0.011	0.002	-0.048	-0.063
	(0.040)	(0.041)	(0.040)	(0.039)	(0.040)	(0.130)	(0.019)	(0.039)	(0.153)
Disease Awareness	0.037**	0.041**	0.040**	0.040**	0.040**	0.129**	0.021**	0.067***	0.050**
	(0.017)	(0.018)	(0.017)	(0.017)	(0.017)	(0.057)	(0.009)	(0.021)	(0.070)
Symptom Occurrence						0.052	0.013	0.034	0.045**
						(0.062)	(0.010)	(0.022)	(0.072)
HH Member trained	0.087*	0.093*	0.091*	0.100**	0.098**	0.249	0.043*	0.043	0.115**
	(0.049)	(0.050)	(0.050)	(0.050)	(0.050)	(0.166)	(0.026)	(0.038)	(0.180)
Asset Index	0.037***	0.044***	0.043***	0.048***	0.047***	0.130***	0.023***	0.039***	0.045***
	(0.013)	(0.013)	(0.013)	(0.013)	(0.013)	(0.042)	(0.007)	(0.013)	(0.048)
Dependency Ratio	-0.202***	-0.179***	-0.151***			-0.596***	-0.097***	-0.205***	-0.248***
	(0.041)	(0.040)	(0.042)			(0.135)	(0.027)	(0.050)	(0.170)
# of HH Members				-0.007***					
				(0.002)					
# of Children				-0.019***					
				(0.004)					
Mountain Treatment	0.004	0.003	0.003	-0.002	-0.001	-0.176	0.001	-0.057	0.078
	(0.027)	(0.028)	(0.027)	(0.027)	(0.027)	(0.117)	(0.013)	(0.084)	(0.239)
Coastal Treatment	0.155***	0.175***	0.170***	0.161***	0.155***	0.098	0.073***	0.023	0.329**
	(0.035)	(0.035)	(0.035)	(0.036)	(0.036)	(0.198)	(0.021)	(0.157)	(0.472)
Coastal Control	0.224***	0.233***	0.231***	0.225***	0.222***	0.742***	0.099***		
	(0.031)	(0.031)	(0.031)	(0.031)	(0.031)	(0.103)	(0.026)		
Water Tank present	0.006	0.015	0.014	0.017	0.014	0.022	0.008	0.002	0.039
	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.078)	(0.012)	(0.027)	(0.106)
TV present	0.041*	0.044*	0.040	0.050**	0.048*				
	(0.025)	(0.025)	(0.025)	(0.025)	(0.024)				
TV and/or PC present									0.043
									(0.113)
Web Access	0.032	0.041	0.044	0.030	0.032	0.045	0.016	-0.008	
	(0.082)	(0.082)	(0.082)	(0.082)	(0.083)	(0.268)	(0.041)	(0.071)	
Edu. Durat° HH Head	0.009***							0.008***	
	(0.002)							(0.003)	
Literacy HH Head		0.045**							
		(0.021)							
Mean Edu. Durat° Adults			0.091*						
			(0.051)						
Primary Edu				-0.008	-0.009	-0.023	-0.003		0.033
				(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.074)	(0.011)		(0.092)
Intermediate Edu				0.041	0.043	0.168	0.026		0.071
				(0.039)	(0.039)	(0.127)	(0.020)		(0.145)
Secondary Edu				0.065**	0.070**	0.224**	0.040**		0.134***
				(0.029)	(0.028)	(0.098)	(0.016)		(0.134)
Tertiary Edu				0.079**	0.084***	0.274**	0.050***		0.137***
				(0.032)	(0.031)	(0.111)	(0.018)		(0.146)
Sample Size	2466	2466	2471	2466	2466	2400	2466	2037	2037
Adj. R²								0.105	
Pseudo R²	0.093	0.086	0.085	0.085	0.089				0.097

Average marginal effects displayed for non-linear models. Robust standard errors in parentheses; bootstrapped for 2SPrB. Levels of statistical significance: * p<0.10, ** p<0.05, *** p<0.01

Table C.16: Probability of cleanser use, sewerage, other specifications & estimators

Specification	(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)	(6)	(7)	(8)	(9)
Estimator	Probit	Probit	Probit	Probit	Probit	IV-Probit	SUR BP	2SLS	2SPrB
Piped Water	0.094***	0.100***	0.100***	0.105***	0.103***	0.911***	0.203***	0.227**	0.047
	(0.027)	(0.027)	(0.027)	(0.027)	(0.027)	(0.329)	(0.050)	(0.111)	(0.338)
Sewerage	0.047*	0.053*	0.051*	0.054**	0.048*	-0.055	0.024*	0.002	0.070
	(0.027)	(0.027)	(0.027)	(0.027)	(0.027)	(0.163)	(0.014)	(0.050)	(0.162)
Age HH Head	0.001	-0.000	-0.001	0.001	0.000	0.000	0.000	0.001	0.001
	(0.001)	(0.001)	(0.001)	(0.001)	(0.001)	(0.002)	(0.000)	(0.001)	(0.003)
Gender HH Head	-0.014	0.020	0.033	0.029	0.017	0.009	-0.001	0.016	0.026
	(0.046)	(0.046)	(0.045)	(0.045)	(0.045)	(0.147)	(0.023)	(0.045)	(0.167)
Marital Status HH Head	-0.005	-0.020	-0.015	-0.022	-0.005	0.013	0.001	-0.050	-0.061
	(0.040)	(0.041)	(0.040)	(0.039)	(0.040)	(0.131)	(0.020)	(0.039)	(0.147)
Disease Awareness	0.038**	0.042**	0.041**	0.040**	0.040**	0.129**	0.021**	0.064***	0.058***
	(0.017)	(0.017)	(0.017)	(0.017)	(0.017)	(0.057)	(0.009)	(0.020)	(0.064)
Symptom Occurrence						0.050	0.013	0.037*	0.041*
						(0.063)	(0.010)	(0.021)	(0.069)
HH Member trained	0.081	0.086*	0.082	0.092*	0.091*	0.247	0.040	0.050	0.082
	(0.049)	(0.050)	(0.051)	(0.050)	(0.050)	(0.165)	(0.026)	(0.035)	(0.167)
Asset Index	0.036***	0.043***	0.042***	0.047***	0.046***	0.131***	0.022***	0.040***	0.042***
	(0.013)	(0.013)	(0.013)	(0.013)	(0.013)	(0.042)	(0.007)	(0.013)	(0.047)
Dependency Ratio	-0.197***	-0.174***	-0.148***			-0.599***	-0.096***	-0.213***	-
	(0.041)	(0.040)	(0.042)			(0.135)	(0.026)	(0.045)	(0.153)
# of HH Members				-0.007***					
				(0.002)					
# of Children					-0.018***				
					(0.004)				
Mountain Treatment	-0.002	-0.003	-0.003	-0.009	-0.006	-0.171	-0.002	-0.032	0.005
	(0.027)	(0.028)	(0.027)	(0.028)	(0.027)	(0.124)	(0.013)	(0.045)	(0.123)
Coastal Treatment	0.135***	0.153***	0.149***	0.138***	0.135***	0.117	0.064***	0.073	0.165***
	(0.037)	(0.037)	(0.037)	(0.037)	(0.037)	(0.203)	(0.021)	(0.065)	(0.203)
Coastal Control	0.220***	0.228***	0.226***	0.219***	0.217***	0.744***	0.099***		
	(0.031)	(0.031)	(0.031)	(0.031)	(0.031)	(0.106)	(0.025)		
Water Tank present	0.004	0.012	0.012	0.014	0.012	0.024	0.007	0.006	0.022
	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.078)	(0.012)	(0.025)	(0.097)
TV present	0.040	0.043*	0.039	0.049**	0.046*				
	(0.025)	(0.025)	(0.025)	(0.025)	(0.024)				
TV and/or PC present									0.025
									(0.102)
Web Access	0.028	0.036	0.040	0.026	0.028	0.043	0.014	-0.001	
	(0.082)	(0.081)	(0.082)	(0.082)	(0.082)	(0.268)	(0.041)	(0.069)	
Edu. Durat° HH Head	0.009***							0.009***	
	(0.002)							(0.002)	
Literacy HH Head		0.043**							
		(0.021)							
Mean Edu. Durat° Adults			0.083						
			(0.051)						
Primary Edu				-0.008	-0.009	-0.024	-0.004		0.021
				(0.024)	(0.024)	(0.075)	(0.011)		(0.084)
Intermediate Edu				0.039	0.041	0.168	0.025		0.063
				(0.039)	(0.039)	(0.127)	(0.020)		(0.140)
Secondary Edu				0.064**	0.068**	0.225**	0.040**		0.108**
				(0.029)	(0.028)	(0.099)	(0.016)		(0.111)
Tertiary Edu				0.078**	0.083***	0.273**	0.050***		0.113**
				(0.032)	(0.031)	(0.111)	(0.018)		(0.125)
Sample Size	2466	2466	2470	2466	2466	2400	2466	2037	2037
Adj. R²								0.114	
Pseudo R²	0.094	0.087	0.086	0.086	0.090				0.102

Average marginal effects displayed for non-linear models. Robust standard errors in parentheses; bootstrapped for 2SPrB. Levels of statistical significance: * $p<0.10$, ** $p<0.05$, *** $p<0.01$

161

Table C.17: Spending on soap, piped water, ICT covariates

Specification	(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)
Estimator	OLS	OLS	OLS	OLS	OLS
Piped Water	0.262***	0.224***	0.296***	0.264***	0.285***
	(0.073)	(0.073)	(0.073)	(0.074)	(0.073)
Age HH Head	-0.005**	-0.005**	-0.005*	-0.004*	-0.006**
	(0.002)	(0.002)	(0.002)	(0.002)	(0.002)
Gender HH Head	-0.113	-0.078	-0.072	-0.123	-0.070
	(0.180)	(0.182)	(0.182)	(0.184)	(0.182)
Marital Status HH Head	0.008	0.003	0.001	-0.019	-0.009
	(0.148)	(0.150)	(0.150)	(0.153)	(0.151)
Disease Awareness	0.037	0.030	0.061	0.038	0.059
	(0.055)	(0.056)	(0.056)	(0.056)	(0.056)
HH Member trained	-0.043	-0.023	-0.007	-0.033	0.013
	(0.138)	(0.141)	(0.138)	(0.136)	(0.136)
Asset Index	0.094**	0.102**	0.139***	0.049	0.127***
	(0.040)	(0.041)	(0.041)	(0.045)	(0.042)
Dependency Ratio	-0.515***	-0.534***	-0.501***	-0.479***	-0.490***
	(0.145)	(0.147)	(0.149)	(0.148)	(0.151)
Mountain Treatment	-0.075	-0.079	-0.109	-0.101	-0.096
	(0.077)	(0.078)	(0.076)	(0.077)	(0.076)
Coastal Treatment	-0.394***	-0.434***	-0.404***	-0.372***	-0.440***
	(0.106)	(0.107)	(0.107)	(0.107)	(0.106)
Coastal Control	-0.396***	-0.530***	-0.556***	-0.532***	-0.581***
	(0.101)	(0.104)	(0.107)	(0.104)	(0.106)
Water Tank present	0.191**	0.211**	0.224***	0.246***	0.223***
	(0.083)	(0.083)	(0.085)	(0.084)	(0.085)
TV present	0.819***				
	(0.103)				
Sat. Dish present		0.549***			
		(0.074)			
Radio present			0.202***		
			(0.059)		
GSM present				0.430***	
				(0.072)	
Landline Connection					0.231***
					(0.065)
Primary Edu	0.085	0.069	0.106	0.098	0.100
	(0.073)	(0.074)	(0.074)	(0.074)	(0.074)
Intermediate Edu	-0.199	-0.205	-0.166	-0.166	-0.167
	(0.129)	(0.129)	(0.131)	(0.130)	(0.132)
Secondary Edu	0.091	0.068	0.118	0.098	0.103
	(0.094)	(0.095)	(0.095)	(0.094)	(0.095)
Tertiary Edu	0.117	0.074	0.099	0.075	0.087
	(0.104)	(0.106)	(0.108)	(0.107)	(0.109)
Constant	3.287***	3.615***	3.707***	3.741***	3.827***
	(0.216)	(0.209)	(0.212)	(0.210)	(0.212)
Sample Size	2.262	2.262	2.262	2.262	2.262
Adj. R²	0.113	0.100	0.076	0.089	0.076

Robust standard errors in parentheses. Levels of statistical significance: * p<0.10, ** p<0.05, *** p<0.01

Table C.18: Spending on soap, sewerage, ICT covariates

Specification	(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)
Estimator	OLS	OLS	OLS	OLS	OLS
Piped Water	0.277***	0.239***	0.297***	0.268***	0.290***
	(0.083)	(0.082)	(0.082)	(0.083)	(0.082)
Sewerage	-0.031	-0.030	-0.002	-0.009	-0.010
	(0.087)	(0.087)	(0.086)	(0.086)	(0.086)
Age HH Head	-0.005**	-0.005**	-0.005*	-0.004*	-0.006**
	(0.002)	(0.002)	(0.002)	(0.002)	(0.002)
Gender HH Head	-0.114	-0.079	-0.073	-0.123	-0.070
	(0.181)	(0.183)	(0.183)	(0.184)	(0.183)
Marital Status HH Head	0.009	0.005	0.001	-0.019	-0.009
	(0.148)	(0.150)	(0.150)	(0.154)	(0.151)
Disease Awareness	0.037	0.029	0.061	0.038	0.059
	(0.055)	(0.056)	(0.056)	(0.056)	(0.056)
HH Member trained	-0.040	-0.020	-0.007	-0.032	0.014
	(0.139)	(0.142)	(0.139)	(0.137)	(0.137)
Asset Index	0.094**	0.103**	0.139***	0.049	0.127***
	(0.040)	(0.041)	(0.041)	(0.045)	(0.042)
Dependency Ratio	-0.519***	-0.537***	-0.501***	-0.480***	-0.491***
	(0.146)	(0.148)	(0.150)	(0.149)	(0.151)
Mountain Treatment	-0.070	-0.074	-0.109	-0.100	-0.095
	(0.078)	(0.079)	(0.077)	(0.078)	(0.077)
Coastal Treatment	-0.381***	-0.420***	-0.404***	-0.368***	-0.436***
	(0.114)	(0.115)	(0.115)	(0.115)	(0.114)
Coastal Control	-0.392***	-0.527***	-0.556***	-0.531***	-0.580***
	(0.102)	(0.104)	(0.107)	(0.105)	(0.107)
Water Tank present	0.192**	0.213**	0.224***	0.246***	0.224***
	(0.083)	(0.084)	(0.085)	(0.084)	(0.085)
TV present	0.820***				
	(0.103)				
Sat. Dish present		0.550***			
		(0.074)			
Radio present			0.202***		
			(0.059)		
GSM present				0.430***	
				(0.073)	
Landline Connection					0.231***
					(0.065)
Primary Edu	0.085	0.069	0.106	0.098	0.100
	(0.073)	(0.074)	(0.074)	(0.074)	(0.074)
Intermediate Edu	-0.198	-0.204	-0.166	-0.166	-0.166
	(0.129)	(0.130)	(0.132)	(0.131)	(0.132)
Secondary Edu	0.092	0.069	0.118	0.098	0.103
	(0.094)	(0.095)	(0.095)	(0.094)	(0.095)
Tertiary Edu	0.118	0.074	0.099	0.075	0.087
	(0.104)	(0.106)	(0.108)	(0.107)	(0.109)
Constant	3.282***	3.611***	3.707***	3.740***	3.825***
	(0.216)	(0.209)	(0.211)	(0.209)	(0.212)
Sample Size	2262	2262	2263	2262	2262
Adj. R²	0.113	0.100	0.072	0.088	0.076

Robust standard errors in parentheses. Levels of statistical significance: * $p<0.10$, ** $p<0.05$, *** $p<0.01$

Table C.19: Spending on soap, piped water, other specifications & estimators

Specification	(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)	(6)	(7)	(8)
Estimator	2SLS	OLS	OLS	OLS	OLS	OLS	OLS	OLS
Piped Water	0.240	0.251***	0.262***	0.270***	0.273***	0.291***	0.303***	0.271***
	(0.173)	(0.059)	(0.073)	(0.073)	(0.073)	(0.073)	(0.071)	(0.072)
Age HH Head	-0.004	-0.005**	-0.005**	-0.005*	-0.005**	-0.005**	-0.001	-0.006**
	(0.003)	(0.002)	(0.002)	(0.002)	(0.002)	(0.002)	(0.002)	(0.002)
Gender HH Head	-0.134	-0.114	-0.113	-0.112	-0.114	-0.095	0.023	-0.073
	(0.179)	(0.180)	(0.180)	(0.179)	(0.177)	(0.177)	(0.177)	(0.179)
Marital Status HH Head	0.014	0.006	0.008	0.017	0.007	0.020	-0.007	0.052
	(0.147)	(0.148)	(0.148)	(0.147)	(0.147)	(0.146)	(0.143)	(0.145)
Disease Awareness		0.039	0.037	0.035	0.035	0.042	0.036	0.037
		(0.055)	(0.055)	(0.055)	(0.055)	(0.056)	(0.055)	(0.055)
Symptom Occurrence	0.089							
	(0.058)							
HH Member trained	-0.043	-0.042	-0.040	-0.029	-0.027	-0.013	-0.016	-0.027
	(0.149)	(0.140)	(0.140)	(0.140)	(0.140)	(0.142)	(0.139)	(0.139)
Asset Index	0.094**	0.095**	0.095**	0.097**	0.096**	0.114***	0.143***	0.119***
	(0.041)	(0.041)	(0.041)	(0.041)	(0.040)	(0.041)	(0.041)	(0.040)
Dependency Ratio	-0.547***	-0.519***	-0.516***	-0.515***	-0.509***	-0.558***		
	(0.154)	(0.145)	(0.145)	(0.145)	(0.145)	(0.151)		
# of HH Members							-0.060***	
							(0.008)	
# of Children								-0.089***
								(0.014)
Region	0.326***	0.338***						
	(0.066)	(0.063)						
Mountain Treatment			-0.075	-0.079	-0.085	-0.076	-0.105	-0.087
			(0.077)	(0.077)	(0.077)	(0.077)	(0.076)	(0.076)
Coastal Treatment			-0.394***	-0.398***	-0.396***	-0.366***	-0.461***	-0.443***
			(0.106)	(0.106)	(0.106)	(0.107)	(0.105)	(0.106)
Coastal Control			-0.396***	-0.396***	-0.392***	-0.392***	-0.439***	-0.424***
			(0.101)	(0.101)	(0.101)	(0.101)	(0.101)	(0.101)
Water Tank present	0.196**	0.189**	0.190**	0.190**	0.190**	0.207**	0.220***	0.201**
	(0.084)	(0.083)	(0.083)	(0.083)	(0.083)	(0.082)	(0.082)	(0.083)
TV present	0.812***	0.822***	0.818***	0.816***	0.815***	0.823***	0.860***	0.831***
	(0.111)	(0.103)	(0.103)	(0.103)	(0.104)	(0.103)	(0.103)	(0.103)
Web Access	-0.056	-0.064	-0.067	-0.068	-0.069	-0.055	-0.120	-0.095
	(0.313)	(0.316)	(0.315)	(0.313)	(0.312)	(0.308)	(0.303)	(0.312)
Edu. Durat° HH Head	0.006			0.006				
	(0.007)			(0.006)				
Literacy HH Head					0.090			
					(0.070)			
Mean Edu. Durat° Adults						-0.216		
						(0.175)		
Primary Edu		0.084	0.085				0.084	0.081
		(0.072)	(0.073)				(0.072)	(0.073)
Intermediate Edu		-0.201	-0.198				-0.247*	-0.222*
		(0.129)	(0.129)				(0.128)	(0.129)
Secondary Edu		0.091	0.091				0.027	0.069
		(0.093)	(0.094)				(0.093)	(0.093)
Tertiary Edu		0.118	0.118				0.044	0.089
		(0.103)	(0.104)				(0.103)	(0.103)
Constant	2.889***	2.896***	3.286***	3.251***	3.242***	4.221***	3.128***	3.230***
	(0.207)	(0.204)	(0.217)	(0.216)	(0.216)	(0.796)	(0.205)	(0.207)
Sample Size	2211	2262	2262	2262	2260	2263	2262	2262
Adj. R²	0.110	0.113	0.113	0.112	0.112	0.112	0.128	0.123

Robust standard errors in parentheses. Levels of statistical significance: * p<0.10, ** p<0.05, *** p<0.01

Table C.20: Spending on soap, sewerage, other specifications & estimators

Specification	(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)	(6)	(7)	(8)
Estimator	2SLS	OLS	OLS	OLS	OLS	OLS	OLS	OLS
Piped Water	0.574	0.273***	0.277***	0.287***	0.289***	0.299***	0.321***	0.296***
	(0.468)	(0.078)	(0.083)	(0.083)	(0.083)	(0.083)	(0.082)	(0.082)
Sewerage	-0.247	-0.033	-0.031	-0.035	-0.034	-0.018	-0.036	-0.051
	(0.335)	(0.083)	(0.087)	(0.087)	(0.087)	(0.087)	(0.086)	(0.086)
Age HH Head	-0.005*	-0.005**	-0.005**	-0.005*	-0.005**	-0.005**	-0.001	-0.006**
	(0.003)	(0.002)	(0.002)	(0.002)	(0.002)	(0.002)	(0.002)	(0.002)
Gender HH Head	-0.128	-0.116	-0.114	-0.113	-0.115	-0.095	0.022	-0.075
	(0.179)	(0.181)	(0.181)	(0.179)	(0.178)	(0.177)	(0.177)	(0.180)
Marital Status HH Head	0.026	0.008	0.009	0.018	0.009	0.020	-0.006	0.054
	(0.148)	(0.149)	(0.148)	(0.148)	(0.147)	(0.146)	(0.143)	(0.146)
Disease Awareness		0.039	0.037	0.034	0.034	0.042	0.036	0.037
		(0.055)	(0.055)	(0.055)	(0.055)	(0.056)	(0.055)	(0.055)
Symptom Occurrence	0.071							
	(0.062)							
HH Member trained	-0.067	-0.039	-0.038	-0.027	-0.025	-0.011	-0.013	-0.022
	(0.147)	(0.141)	(0.141)	(0.141)	(0.140)	(0.143)	(0.140)	(0.139)
Asset Index	0.102**	0.095**	0.095**	0.098**	0.097**	0.114***	0.144***	0.120***
	(0.043)	(0.041)	(0.041)	(0.041)	(0.040)	(0.041)	(0.040)	(0.040)
Dependency Ratio	-0.531***	-0.523***	-0.519***	-0.518***	-0.512***	-0.559***		
	(0.151)	(0.145)	(0.146)	(0.146)	(0.145)	(0.152)		
# of HH Members							-0.036	
							(0.082)	
# of Children								-0.089***
								(0.014)
Region	0.310***	0.333***						
	(0.069)	(0.065)						
Mountain Treatment			-0.071	-0.074	-0.080	-0.073	-0.100	-0.080
			(0.078)	(0.079)	(0.079)	(0.079)	(0.077)	(0.078)
Coastal Treatment			-0.381***	-0.383***	-0.381***	-0.358***	-0.445***	-0.421***
			(0.114)	(0.114)	(0.114)	(0.114)	(0.113)	(0.113)
Coastal Control			-0.393***	-0.393***	-0.389***	-0.390***	-0.435***	-0.419***
			(0.102)	(0.102)	(0.102)	(0.102)	(0.101)	(0.101)
Water Tank present	0.213**	0.190**	0.192**	0.191**	0.192**	0.208**	0.222***	0.203**
	(0.087)	(0.083)	(0.083)	(0.083)	(0.083)	(0.082)	(0.082)	(0.083)
TV present	0.785***	0.823***	0.819***	0.817***	0.816***	0.824***	0.861***	0.832***
	(0.111)	(0.103)	(0.103)	(0.103)	(0.104)	(0.103)	(0.103)	(0.103)
Web Access	-0.077	-0.063	-0.066	-0.067	-0.068	-0.054	-0.118	-0.093
	(0.314)	(0.316)	(0.315)	(0.312)	(0.312)	(0.308)	(0.303)	(0.311)
Edu. Durat° HH Head	0.004			0.006				
	(0.007)			(0.006)				
Literacy HH Head					0.091			
					(0.070)			
Mean Edu. Durat° Adults						-0.213		
						(0.176)		
Primary Edu		0.084	0.085				0.084	0.081
		(0.072)	(0.073)				(0.072)	(0.073)
Intermediate Edu		-0.199	-0.197				-0.246*	-0.220*
		(0.129)	(0.129)				(0.128)	(0.129)
Secondary Edu		0.093	0.092				0.028	0.070
		(0.093)	(0.094)				(0.093)	(0.093)
Tertiary Edu		0.120	0.119				0.045	0.090
		(0.103)	(0.104)				(0.103)	(0.103)
Constant	2.848***	0.084	3.281***	3.246***	3.237***	4.206***	0.084	3.221***
	(0.209)	(0.072)	(0.216)	(0.215)	(0.215)	(0.797)	(0.072)	(0.206)
Sample Size	2211	2262	2262	2262	2260	2263	2262	2262
Adj. R²	0.104	0.113	0.112	0.111	0.111	0.112	0.128	0.123

Robust standard errors in parentheses. Levels of statistical significance: * p<0.10, ** p<0.05, *** p<0.01

Table C.21: Spending on cleanser, piped water, ICT covariates

Specification	(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)
Estimator	OLS	OLS	OLS	OLS	OLS
Piped Water	0.070	0.032	0.130*	0.049	0.113
	(0.074)	(0.075)	(0.073)	(0.075)	(0.074)
Age HH Head	-0.010***	-0.010***	-0.009***	-0.009***	-0.010***
	(0.003)	(0.003)	(0.003)	(0.003)	(0.003)
Gender HH Head	-0.090	-0.053	-0.044	-0.107	-0.044
	(0.180)	(0.186)	(0.190)	(0.187)	(0.190)
Marital Status HH Head	0.106	0.093	0.086	0.051	0.080
	(0.146)	(0.151)	(0.155)	(0.154)	(0.155)
Disease Awareness	0.213***	0.215***	0.254***	0.217***	0.249***
	(0.059)	(0.060)	(0.061)	(0.060)	(0.061)
HH Member trained	0.344***	0.376***	0.405***	0.357***	0.414***
	(0.104)	(0.106)	(0.102)	(0.100)	(0.100)
Asset Index	0.100**	0.122***	0.179***	0.034	0.158***
	(0.043)	(0.044)	(0.045)	(0.049)	(0.046)
Dependency Ratio	-0.586***	-0.594***	-0.581***	-0.537***	-0.556***
	(0.159)	(0.162)	(0.166)	(0.164)	(0.167)
Mountain Treatment	0.015	0.008	-0.020	-0.008	-0.016
	(0.076)	(0.077)	(0.073)	(0.076)	(0.073)
Coastal Treatment	-0.316***	-0.360***	-0.361***	-0.256**	-0.376***
	(0.107)	(0.109)	(0.109)	(0.108)	(0.109)
Coastal Control	-0.388***	-0.559***	-0.628***	-0.551***	-0.631***
	(0.106)	(0.111)	(0.116)	(0.111)	(0.115)
Water Tank present	0.027	0.060	0.082	0.107	0.078
	(0.087)	(0.089)	(0.091)	(0.089)	(0.091)
TV present	1.068***				
	(0.120)				
Sat. Dish present		0.647***			
		(0.084)			
Radio present			0.099		
			(0.063)		
GSM present				0.608***	
				(0.080)	
Landline Connection					0.229***
					(0.070)
Primary Edu	0.016	0.014	0.042	0.035	0.032
	(0.078)	(0.080)	(0.081)	(0.081)	(0.081)
Intermediate Edu	-0.258*	-0.252*	-0.217	-0.222	-0.223
	(0.145)	(0.145)	(0.148)	(0.145)	(0.148)
Secondary Edu	-0.017	-0.026	0.021	-0.005	-0.000
	(0.100)	(0.103)	(0.103)	(0.101)	(0.103)
Tertiary Edu	-0.016	-0.058	-0.041	-0.086	-0.065
	(0.112)	(0.116)	(0.120)	(0.117)	(0.121)
Constant	4.152***	4.575***	4.753***	4.749***	4.844***
	(0.243)	(0.234)	(0.239)	(0.235)	(0.240)
Sample Size	1992	1992	1992	1992	1992
Adj. R²	0.146	0.115	0.079	0.110	0.082

Robust standard errors in parentheses. Levels of statistical significance: * $p<0.10$, ** $p<0.05$, *** $p<0.01$

Table C.22: Spending on cleanser, sewerage, ICT covariates

Specification	(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)
Estimator	OLS	OLS	OLS	OLS	OLS
Piped Water	0.080	0.035	0.114	0.034	0.102
	(0.084)	(0.084)	(0.083)	(0.084)	(0.083)
Sewerage	-0.018	-0.005	0.030	0.030	0.022
	(0.085)	(0.087)	(0.086)	(0.085)	(0.086)
Age HH Head	-0.010***	-0.010***	-0.009***	-0.009***	-0.010***
	(0.003)	(0.003)	(0.003)	(0.003)	(0.003)
Gender HH Head	-0.091	-0.053	-0.042	-0.106	-0.043
	(0.181)	(0.186)	(0.191)	(0.188)	(0.190)
Marital Status HH Head	0.107	0.094	0.084	0.050	0.079
	(0.147)	(0.152)	(0.155)	(0.155)	(0.156)
Disease Awareness	0.213***	0.215***	0.254***	0.217***	0.249***
	(0.059)	(0.060)	(0.061)	(0.060)	(0.061)
HH Member trained	0.346***	0.376***	0.403***	0.355***	0.412***
	(0.104)	(0.107)	(0.102)	(0.101)	(0.100)
Asset Index	0.100**	0.122***	0.179***	0.034	0.158***
	(0.043)	(0.044)	(0.045)	(0.049)	(0.046)
Dependency Ratio	-0.588***	-0.595***	-0.578***	-0.535***	-0.553***
	(0.159)	(0.163)	(0.166)	(0.164)	(0.168)
Mountain Treatment	0.017	0.008	-0.023	-0.011	-0.018
	(0.076)	(0.078)	(0.074)	(0.077)	(0.074)
Coastal Treatment	-0.309***	-0.358***	-0.372***	-0.267**	-0.385***
	(0.113)	(0.116)	(0.116)	(0.114)	(0.115)
Coastal Control	-0.386***	-0.558***	-0.630***	-0.554***	-0.632***
	(0.106)	(0.111)	(0.116)	(0.112)	(0.115)
Water Tank present	0.028	0.060	0.081	0.105	0.077
	(0.088)	(0.089)	(0.091)	(0.090)	(0.092)
TV present	1.069***				
	(0.120)				
Sat. Dish present		0.647***			
		(0.084)			
Radio present			0.099		
			(0.063)		
GSM present				0.608***	
				(0.080)	
Landline Connection					0.229***
					(0.070)
Primary Edu	0.016	0.014	0.042	0.035	0.032
	(0.078)	(0.080)	(0.081)	(0.081)	(0.081)
Intermediate Edu	-0.257*	-0.251*	-0.219	-0.224	-0.225
	(0.146)	(0.146)	(0.148)	(0.146)	(0.149)
Secondary Edu	-0.016	-0.026	0.020	-0.006	-0.001
	(0.100)	(0.103)	(0.103)	(0.101)	(0.103)
Tertiary Edu	-0.016	-0.058	-0.042	-0.087	-0.065
	(0.112)	(0.116)	(0.120)	(0.117)	(0.121)
Constant	4.149***	4.574***	4.757***	4.753***	4.847***
	(0.243)	(0.234)	(0.239)	(0.235)	(0.240)
Sample Size	1992	1992	1992	1992	1992
Adj. R²	0.146	0.115	0.078	0.110	0.081

Robust standard errors in parentheses. Levels of statistical significance: * $p<0.10$, ** $p<0.05$, *** $p<0.01$

Table C.23: Spending on cleanser, piped water, other specifications & estimators

Specification	(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)	(6)	(7)	(8)
Estimator	2SLS	OLS	OLS	OLS	OLS	OLS	OLS	OLS
Piped Water	0.045	0.113*	0.073	0.080	0.081	0.088	0.124*	0.094
	(0.177)	(0.064)	(0.074)	(0.075)	(0.075)	(0.076)	(0.073)	(0.073)
Age HH Head	-0.008***	-0.010***	-0.010***	-0.009***	-0.009***	-0.009***	-0.006**	-0.011***
	(0.003)	(0.003)	(0.003)	(0.003)	(0.003)	(0.002)	(0.003)	(0.003)
Gender HH Head	-0.120	-0.094	-0.089	-0.092	-0.079	-0.087	0.043	-0.044
	(0.180)	(0.179)	(0.180)	(0.179)	(0.177)	(0.176)	(0.180)	(0.180)
Marital Status HH Head	0.109	0.108	0.106	0.108	0.102	0.105	0.064	0.136
	(0.146)	(0.146)	(0.146)	(0.145)	(0.145)	(0.144)	(0.142)	(0.144)
Disease Awareness		0.214***	0.214***	0.213***	0.212***	0.214***	0.210***	0.213***
		(0.059)	(0.059)	(0.059)	(0.059)	(0.059)	(0.059)	(0.059)
Symptom Occurrence	0.174***							
	(0.060)							
HH Member trained	0.363***	0.356***	0.354***	0.363***	0.363***	0.374***	0.383***	0.372***
	(0.117)	(0.106)	(0.106)	(0.106)	(0.106)	(0.107)	(0.102)	(0.103)
Asset Index	0.098**	0.102**	0.103**	0.102**	0.104**	0.110**	0.146***	0.128***
	(0.044)	(0.044)	(0.044)	(0.044)	(0.044)	(0.045)	(0.044)	(0.044)
Dependency Ratio	-0.639***	-0.592***	-0.587***	-0.587***	-0.583***	-0.638***		
	(0.167)	(0.157)	(0.158)	(0.158)	(0.158)	(0.164)		
# of HH Members							-0.055***	
							(0.009)	
# of Children								-0.091***
								(0.014)
Region	0.340***	0.362***						
	(0.069)	(0.065)						
Mountain Treatment			0.013	0.010	0.007	0.008	-0.031	-0.005
			(0.076)	(0.076)	(0.076)	(0.076)	(0.075)	(0.074)
Coastal Treatment			-0.317***	-0.317***	-0.318***	-0.308***	-0.399***	-0.376***
			(0.107)	(0.107)	(0.107)	(0.107)	(0.108)	(0.106)
Coastal Control			-0.389***	-0.383***	-0.382***	-0.385***	-0.444***	-0.420***
			(0.106)	(0.106)	(0.106)	(0.106)	(0.107)	(0.106)
Water Tank present	0.036	0.023	0.027	0.026	0.027	0.033	0.061	0.040
	(0.088)	(0.087)	(0.087)	(0.087)	(0.087)	(0.087)	(0.087)	(0.087)
TV present	1.077***	1.071***	1.065***	1.063***	1.069***	1.068***	1.103***	1.074***
	(0.129)	(0.120)	(0.120)	(0.120)	(0.121)	(0.120)	(0.121)	(0.121)
Web Access	-0.162	-0.202	-0.201	-0.206	-0.204	-0.204	-0.258	-0.240
	(0.350)	(0.353)	(0.353)	(0.349)	(0.349)	(0.345)	(0.334)	(0.347)
Edu. Durat° HH Head	0.001			-0.001				
	(0.007)			(0.006)				
Literacy HH Head					-0.026			
					(0.075)			
Mean Edu. Durat° Adults						-0.169		
						(0.164)		
Primary Edu		0.018	0.016				0.008	0.009
		(0.078)	(0.078)				(0.078)	(0.078)
Intermediate Edu		-0.252*	-0.256*				-0.311**	-0.284*
		(0.146)	(0.146)				(0.145)	(0.145)
Secondary Edu		-0.012	-0.016				-0.083	-0.044
		(0.100)	(0.100)				(0.100)	(0.100)
Tertiary Edu		-0.008	-0.013				-0.095	-0.049
		(0.112)	(0.112)				(0.112)	(0.112)
Constant	3.828***	3.783***	4.147***	4.107***	4.106***	4.834***	3.985***	4.081***
	(0.233)	(0.233)	(0.243)	(0.242)	(0.241)	(0.731)	(0.234)	(0.235)
Sample Size	1952	1992	1992	1992	1991	1993	1992	1992
Adj. R²	0.141	0.147	0.146	0.146	0.146	0.146	0.155	0.155

Robust standard errors in parentheses. Levels of statistical significance: *

Table C.24: Spending on cleanser, sewerage, other specifications & estimators

Specification	(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)	(6)	(7)	(8)
Estimator	2SLS	OLS	OLS	OLS	OLS	OLS	OLS	OLS
Piped Water	0.484	0.117	0.082	0.093	0.092	0.094	0.133	0.110
	(0.516)	(0.080)	(0.084)	(0.085)	(0.084)	(0.085)	(0.083)	(0.083)
Sewerage	-0.307	-0.006	-0.018	-0.024	-0.022	-0.012	-0.017	-0.031
	(0.382)	(0.083)	(0.085)	(0.085)	(0.085)	(0.086)	(0.085)	(0.085)
Age HH Head	-0.009***	-0.010***	-0.010***	-0.009***	-0.009***	-0.009***	-0.006**	-0.011***
	(0.003)	(0.003)	(0.003)	(0.003)	(0.003)	(0.002)	(0.003)	(0.003)
Gender HH Head	-0.120	-0.095	-0.090	-0.093	-0.080	-0.087	0.042	-0.046
	(0.181)	(0.180)	(0.181)	(0.180)	(0.178)	(0.177)	(0.181)	(0.180)
Marital Status HH Head	0.126	0.108	0.107	0.109	0.103	0.105	0.065	0.137
	(0.149)	(0.147)	(0.147)	(0.146)	(0.146)	(0.145)	(0.143)	(0.145)
Disease Awareness		0.214***	0.214***	0.213***	0.212***	0.214***	0.210***	0.212***
		(0.059)	(0.059)	(0.059)	(0.059)	(0.059)	(0.059)	(0.059)
Symptom Occurrence	0.149**							
	(0.067)							
HH Member trained	0.328***	0.357***	0.355***	0.365***	0.365***	0.375***	0.384***	0.374***
	(0.115)	(0.107)	(0.107)	(0.106)	(0.106)	(0.107)	(0.103)	(0.104)
Asset Index	0.110**	0.102**	0.104**	0.103**	0.104**	0.110**	0.147***	0.129***
	(0.046)	(0.044)	(0.044)	(0.044)	(0.044)	(0.044)	(0.044)	(0.044)
Dependency Ratio	-0.613***	-0.593***	-0.589***	-0.589***	-0.585***	-0.639***		
	(0.164)	(0.158)	(0.159)	(0.159)	(0.158)	(0.164)		
# of HH Members							-0.055***	
							(0.009)	
# of Children								-0.091***
								(0.015)
Region	0.335***	0.361***						
	(0.069)	(0.067)						
Mountain Treatment			0.015	0.012	0.010	0.009	-0.030	-0.002
			(0.077)	(0.077)	(0.077)	(0.077)	(0.076)	(0.075)
Coastal Treatment			-0.310***	-0.308***	-0.310***	-0.304***	-0.393***	-0.365***
			(0.113)	(0.113)	(0.113)	(0.113)	(0.113)	(0.112)
Coastal Control			-0.387***	-0.381***	-0.381***	-0.384***	-0.443***	-0.418***
			(0.106)	(0.106)	(0.106)	(0.106)	(0.107)	(0.106)
Water Tank present	0.060	0.023	0.028	0.027	0.028	0.033	0.062	0.042
	(0.093)	(0.088)	(0.088)	(0.088)	(0.087)	(0.087)	(0.087)	(0.088)
TV present	1.039***	1.072***	1.066***	1.063***	1.070***	1.068***	1.104***	1.075***
	(0.128)	(0.120)	(0.120)	(0.120)	(0.121)	(0.120)	(0.121)	(0.121)
Web Access	-0.198	-0.202	-0.201	-0.206	-0.204	-0.204	-0.258	-0.240
	(0.350)	(0.353)	(0.353)	(0.349)	(0.349)	(0.345)	(0.334)	(0.347)
Edu. Durat° HH Head	-0.003			-0.001				
	(0.007)			(0.006)				
Literacy HH Head					-0.025			
					(0.075)			
Mean Edu. Durat° Adults						-0.168		
						(0.165)		
Primary Edu		0.018	0.017				0.008	0.009
		(0.078)	(0.078)				(0.078)	(0.078)
Intermediate Edu		-0.252*	-0.255*				-0.310**	-0.282*
		(0.146)	(0.146)				(0.146)	(0.146)
Secondary Edu		-0.012	-0.016				-0.082	-0.043
		(0.100)	(0.100)				(0.100)	(0.100)
Tertiary Edu		-0.008	-0.012				-0.095	-0.048
		(0.112)	(0.112)				(0.112)	(0.112)
Constant	3.771***	3.784***	4.145***	4.104***	4.103***	4.824***	3.982***	4.076***
	(0.236)	(0.233)	(0.244)	(0.242)	(0.242)	(0.737)	(0.235)	(0.236)
Sample Size	1952	1992	1992	1992	1991	1993	1992	1992
Adj. R²	0.133	0.146	0.146	0.145	0.145	0.146	0.155	0.154

Robust standard errors in parentheses. Levels of statistical significance: *

Table C.25: Latrine-cleaning frequency, piped water, ICT covariates

Specification	(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)	(6)
Estimator	OLS	OLS	OLS	OLS	OLS	OLS
Piped Water	0.435*	0.421*	0.441*	0.428*	0.420*	0.439*
	(0.226)	(0.227)	(0.225)	(0.226)	(0.225)	(0.224)
Age HH Head	0.002	0.002	0.002	0.002	0.001	0.002
	(0.006)	(0.006)	(0.006)	(0.006)	(0.006)	(0.006)
Gender HH Head	0.115	0.116	0.112	0.106	0.119	0.115
	(0.308)	(0.308)	(0.309)	(0.309)	(0.309)	(0.308)
Marital Status HH Head	0.224	0.225	0.227	0.219	0.216	0.226
	(0.259)	(0.259)	(0.259)	(0.259)	(0.260)	(0.259)
Disease Awareness	-0.024	-0.031	-0.022	-0.030	-0.028	-0.023
	(0.139)	(0.139)	(0.138)	(0.139)	(0.139)	(0.138)
HH Member trained	0.914*	0.909*	0.926*	0.905*	0.918*	0.923*
	(0.489)	(0.488)	(0.487)	(0.489)	(0.490)	(0.477)
Asset Index	0.590***	0.581***	0.602***	0.566***	0.570***	0.595***
	(0.108)	(0.109)	(0.109)	(0.116)	(0.111)	(0.109)
Dependency Ratio	0.340	0.337	0.321	0.354	0.369	0.338
	(0.309)	(0.309)	(0.311)	(0.310)	(0.309)	(0.310)
Mountain Treatment	-0.339	-0.339	-0.331	-0.345	-0.340	-0.340
	(0.254)	(0.254)	(0.254)	(0.254)	(0.254)	(0.254)
Coastal Treatment	0.392	0.388	0.369	0.405	0.395	0.391
	(0.330)	(0.329)	(0.329)	(0.331)	(0.329)	(0.329)
Coastal Control	-0.377	-0.372	-0.408	-0.371	-0.370	-0.383
	(0.256)	(0.250)	(0.250)	(0.249)	(0.249)	(0.249)
Water Tank present	0.547***	0.545***	0.552***	0.551***	0.542***	0.548***
	(0.178)	(0.178)	(0.178)	(0.178)	(0.177)	(0.177)
Soap bought	0.287	0.261	0.303	0.273	0.278	0.293
	(0.199)	(0.198)	(0.196)	(0.197)	(0.196)	(0.195)
TV present	0.032					
	(0.201)					
Sat. Dish present		0.128				
		(0.153)				
Radio present			-0.107			
			(0.146)			
GSM present				0.108		
				(0.154)		
Landline Connection					0.172	
					(0.177)	
Web Access						-0.177
						(0.897)
Primary Edu	-0.056	-0.063	-0.053	-0.058	-0.060	-0.054
	(0.182)	(0.182)	(0.182)	(0.182)	(0.182)	(0.182)
Intermediate Edu	-0.091	-0.099	-0.085	-0.091	-0.095	-0.087
	(0.272)	(0.272)	(0.273)	(0.272)	(0.272)	(0.273)
Secondary Edu	-0.167	-0.179	-0.162	-0.172	-0.184	-0.165
	(0.213)	(0.214)	(0.214)	(0.214)	(0.214)	(0.214)
Tertiary Edu	0.330	0.320	0.340	0.320	0.306	0.334
	(0.272)	(0.273)	(0.272)	(0.273)	(0.272)	(0.268)
Constant	5.321***	5.329***	5.355***	5.344***	5.398***	5.329***
	(0.515)	(0.508)	(0.508)	(0.509)	(0.515)	(0.509)
Sample Size	2.319	2.319	2.319	2.319	2.319	2.319
Adj. R²	0.045	0.045	0.045	0.045	0.045	0.045

Robust standard errors in parentheses. Levels of statistical significance: * $p<0.10$, ** $p<0.05$, *** $p<0.01$

Table C.26: Latrine-cleaning frequency, sewerage, ICT covariates

Specification	(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)	(6)
Estimator	OLS	OLS	OLS	OLS	OLS	OLS
Piped Water	0.407	0.395	0.413	0.400	0.394	0.410
	(0.262)	(0.263)	(0.261)	(0.262)	(0.261)	(0.261)
Sewerage	0.059	0.054	0.059	0.059	0.055	0.061
	(0.217)	(0.216)	(0.217)	(0.217)	(0.217)	(0.216)
Age HH Head	0.002	0.002	0.002	0.002	0.001	0.002
	(0.006)	(0.006)	(0.006)	(0.006)	(0.006)	(0.006)
Gender HH Head	0.117	0.119	0.115	0.108	0.122	0.117
	(0.308)	(0.308)	(0.308)	(0.309)	(0.308)	(0.308)
Marital Status HH Head	0.221	0.222	0.224	0.216	0.214	0.223
	(0.259)	(0.259)	(0.259)	(0.259)	(0.260)	(0.259)
Disease Awareness	-0.024	-0.030	-0.021	-0.029	-0.027	-0.022
	(0.139)	(0.139)	(0.139)	(0.140)	(0.139)	(0.138)
HH Member trained	0.909*	0.904*	0.920*	0.900*	0.913*	0.918*
	(0.487)	(0.487)	(0.486)	(0.488)	(0.488)	(0.475)
Asset Index	0.589***	0.580***	0.601***	0.565***	0.569***	0.594***
	(0.108)	(0.109)	(0.109)	(0.116)	(0.111)	(0.109)
Dependency Ratio	0.346	0.343	0.328	0.361	0.375	0.345
	(0.311)	(0.311)	(0.313)	(0.312)	(0.311)	(0.312)
Mountain Treatment	-0.347	-0.346	-0.340	-0.353	-0.347	-0.348
	(0.253)	(0.252)	(0.253)	(0.252)	(0.252)	(0.252)
Coastal Treatment	0.367	0.365	0.344	0.379	0.371	0.364
	(0.329)	(0.328)	(0.327)	(0.329)	(0.328)	(0.327)
Coastal Control	-0.382	-0.377	-0.414*	-0.376	-0.375	-0.389
	(0.256)	(0.249)	(0.249)	(0.249)	(0.249)	(0.248)
Water Tank present	0.545***	0.542***	0.549***	0.548***	0.539***	0.545***
	(0.179)	(0.178)	(0.178)	(0.178)	(0.178)	(0.178)
Soap bought	0.286	0.260	0.302	0.272	0.277	0.292
	(0.199)	(0.198)	(0.196)	(0.197)	(0.196)	(0.195)
TV present	0.030					
	(0.201)					
Sat. Dish present		0.126				
		(0.153)				
Radio present			-0.107			
			(0.146)			
GSM present				0.108		
				(0.154)		
Landline Connection					0.171	
					(0.177)	
Web Access						-0.180
						(0.896)
Primary Edu	-0.056	-0.064	-0.053	-0.059	-0.061	-0.055
	(0.182)	(0.182)	(0.182)	(0.182)	(0.182)	(0.182)
Intermediate Edu	-0.093	-0.101	-0.088	-0.094	-0.097	-0.090
	(0.273)	(0.273)	(0.273)	(0.273)	(0.273)	(0.274)
Secondary Edu	-0.169	-0.181	-0.165	-0.175	-0.186	-0.168
	(0.214)	(0.215)	(0.214)	(0.214)	(0.214)	(0.214)
Tertiary Edu	0.328	0.318	0.338	0.317	0.304	0.332
	(0.271)	(0.273)	(0.272)	(0.272)	(0.272)	(0.268)
Constant	5.330***	5.337***	5.364***	5.352***	5.405***	5.338***
	(0.514)	(0.508)	(0.508)	(0.509)	(0.514)	(0.508)
Sample Size	2.319	2.319	2.319	2.319	2.319	2.319
Adj. R²	0.044	0.045	0.044	0.044	0.045	0.044

Robust standard errors in parentheses. Levels of statistical significance: * $p<0.10$, ** $p<0.05$, *** $p<0.01$

Table C.27: Latrine-cleaning frequency, piped water, other specifications & estimators

Specification	(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)	(6)	(7)	(8)
Estimator	2SLS	OLS	OLS	OLS	OLS	OLS	OLS	OLS
Piped Water	1.511***	0.721***	0.438*	0.439**	0.444*	0.380*	0.411*	0.434*
	(0.449)	(0.148)	(0.225)	(0.223)	(0.225)	(0.229)	(0.226)	(0.225)
Age HH Head	-0.001	0.002	0.002	0.002	0.001	0.000	-0.001	0.002
	(0.006)	(0.006)	(0.006)	(0.006)	(0.005)	(0.005)	(0.006)	(0.006)
Gender HH Head	0.105	0.052	0.113	0.102	0.139	0.143	0.008	0.085
	(0.317)	(0.308)	(0.308)	(0.310)	(0.297)	(0.294)	(0.305)	(0.305)
Marital Status HH Head	0.255	0.233	0.226	0.238	0.232	0.206	0.222	0.200
	(0.265)	(0.258)	(0.259)	(0.259)	(0.255)	(0.254)	(0.257)	(0.260)
Disease Awareness	0.059	-0.019	-0.023	-0.024	-0.021	-0.046	-0.020	-0.021
	(0.147)	(0.139)	(0.138)	(0.138)	(0.138)	(0.137)	(0.138)	(0.138)
HH Member trained	0.732	0.935**	0.921*	0.913*	0.914*	0.834*	0.902*	0.913*
	(0.520)	(0.476)	(0.477)	(0.477)	(0.477)	(0.481)	(0.477)	(0.477)
Asset Index	0.623***	0.580***	0.593***	0.605***	0.611*	0.556*	0.556*	0.577*
	(0.111)	(0.110)	(0.110)	(0.110)	(0.110)	(0.108)	(0.110)	(0.110)
Dependency Ratio	0.501	0.269	0.338	0.364	0.371	0.667*		
	(0.328)	(0.309)	(0.310)	(0.312)	(0.308)	(0.316)		
# of HH Members							0.046*	
							(0.018)	
# of Children								0.055*
								(0.031)
Region	-0.142	-0.299*						
	(0.176)	(0.168)						
Mountain Treatment			-0.339	-0.341	-0.338	-0.352	-0.317	-0.331
			(0.254)	(0.253)	(0.253)	(0.253)	(0.256)	(0.255)
Coastal Treatment			0.392	0.406	0.414	0.325	0.448	0.421
			(0.330)	(0.332)	(0.328)	(0.325)	(0.333)	(0.331)
Coastal Control			-0.376	-0.371	-0.370	-0.372	-0.339	-0.357
			(0.256)	(0.256)	(0.256)	(0.256)	(0.259)	(0.257)
Water Tank present	0.528***	0.487***	0.546***	0.562***	0.567*	0.508*	0.527*	0.539*
	(0.179)	(0.176)	(0.178)	(0.177)	(0.176)	(0.177)	(0.177)	(0.177)
Soap bought	0.283	0.264	0.286	0.287	0.288	0.308	0.292	0.289
	(0.202)	(0.201)	(0.199)	(0.200)	(0.199)	(0.199)	(0.199)	(0.199)
TV present	-0.035	0.122	0.030	0.014	0.014	-0.021	0.000	0.022
	(0.229)	(0.201)	(0.202)	(0.202)	(0.202)	(0.202)	(0.201)	(0.202)
Web Access	-0.284	-0.174	-0.174	-0.115	-0.108	-0.127	-0.132	-0.164
	(0.908)	(0.892)	(0.898)	(0.907)	(0.910)	(0.915)	(0.903)	(0.899)
Edu. Durat° HH Head	-0.011			0.001				
	(0.016)			(0.014)				
Literacy HH Head					-0.060			
					(0.162)			
Mean Edu. Durat° Adults						1.071*		
						(0.372)		
Primary Edu		-0.040	-0.055				-0.051	-0.051
		(0.182)	(0.182)				(0.182)	(0.182)
Intermediate Edu		-0.059	-0.088				-0.050	-0.072
		(0.270)	(0.273)				(0.274)	(0.273)
Secondary Edu		-0.118	-0.166				-0.121	-0.151
		(0.212)	(0.214)				(0.211)	(0.211)
Tertiary Edu		0.391	0.335				0.386	0.353
		(0.267)	(0.268)				(0.267)	(0.268)
Constant	4.850***	5.316***	5.318***	5.249***	5.271*	0.563	5.413*	5.361*
	(0.493)	(0.467)	(0.515)	(0.510)	(0.512)	(-1.695)	(0.497)	(0.501)
Sample Size	2260	2319	2319	2319	2320	2322	2319	2319
Adj. R²	0.034	0.040	0.044	0.044	0.044	0.047	0.046	0.045

Robust standard errors in parentheses. Levels of statistical significance: * p<0.10, **

Table C.28: Latrine-cleaning frequency, sewerage, other specifications & estimators

Specification	(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)	(6)	(7)	(8)
Estimator	2SLS	OLS	OLS	OLS	OLS	OLS	OLS	OLS
Piped Water	2.288*	0.613***	0.409	0.411	0.413	0.379	0.380	0.400
	(1.212)	(0.216)	(0.261)	(0.260)	(0.261)	(0.262)	(0.262)	(0.262)
Sewerage	-0.908	0.166	0.060	0.059	0.066	0.003	0.065	0.071
	(0.855)	(0.217)	(0.216)	(0.216)	(0.216)	(0.216)	(0.214)	(0.216)
Age HH Head	-0.002	0.002	0.002	0.002	0.001	0.000	-0.001	0.002
	(0.007)	(0.006)	(0.006)	(0.006)	(0.005)	(0.005)	(0.006)	(0.006)
Gender HH Head	0.075	0.063	0.116	0.105	0.141	0.143	0.010	0.087
	(0.317)	(0.308)	(0.308)	(0.310)	(0.297)	(0.293)	(0.304)	(0.305)
Marital Status HH Head	0.309	0.223	0.223	0.235	0.230	0.206	0.220	0.197
	(0.276)	(0.258)	(0.259)	(0.259)	(0.255)	(0.254)	(0.257)	(0.260)
Disease Awareness	0.064	-0.017	-0.023	-0.023	-0.020	-0.046	-0.019	-0.020
	(0.151)	(0.139)	(0.138)	(0.138)	(0.138)	(0.138)	(0.138)	(0.138)
HH Member trained	0.768	0.919*	0.916*	0.908*	0.909*	0.834*	0.896*	0.906*
	(0.518)	(0.474)	(0.476)	(0.475)	(0.476)	(0.479)	(0.476)	(0.476)
Asset Index	0.644***	0.578***	0.592***	0.604***	0.610*	0.556*	0.554*	0.576*
	(0.114)	(0.110)	(0.110)	(0.110)	(0.110)	(0.108)	(0.110)	(0.110)
Dependency Ratio	0.436	0.290	0.345	0.371	0.378	0.668*		
	(0.323)	(0.312)	(0.312)	(0.315)	(0.310)	(0.317)		
# of HH Members							0.047*	
							(0.018)	
# of Children								0.056*
								(0.031)
Region	-0.270	-0.269						
	(0.178)	(0.168)						
Mountain Treatment			-0.348	-0.350	-0.348	-0.352	-0.326	-0.341
			(0.253)	(0.252)	(0.251)	(0.251)	(0.254)	(0.253)
Coastal Treatment			0.366	0.380	0.385	0.324	0.419	0.390
			(0.329)	(0.330)	(0.326)	(0.324)	(0.331)	(0.329)
Coastal Control			-0.382	-0.376	-0.377	-0.372	-0.345	-0.363
			(0.256)	(0.255)	(0.255)	(0.255)	(0.258)	(0.257)
Water Tank present	0.555***	0.482***	0.544***	0.560***	0.563*	0.508*	0.524*	0.536*
	(0.186)	(0.177)	(0.178)	(0.178)	(0.177)	(0.178)	(0.178)	(0.178)
Soap bought	0.280	0.263	0.285	0.286	0.287	0.308	0.291	0.288
	(0.205)	(0.201)	(0.199)	(0.200)	(0.199)	(0.200)	(0.199)	(0.199)
TV present	-0.026	0.112	0.028	0.012	0.012	-0.021	-0.002	0.020
	(0.233)	(0.200)	(0.202)	(0.202)	(0.202)	(0.202)	(0.201)	(0.201)
Web Access	-0.274	-0.182	-0.177	-0.118	-0.112	-0.127	-0.136	-0.168
	(0.911)	(0.892)	(0.897)	(0.905)	(0.908)	(0.914)	(0.902)	(0.898)
Edu. Durat° HH Head	-0.011			0.001				
	(0.017)			(0.014)				
Literacy HH Head					-0.062			
					(0.163)			
Mean Edu. Durat° Adults						1.070*		
						(0.373)		
Primary Edu			-0.043	-0.055			-0.052	-0.051
			(0.183)	(0.182)			(0.182)	(0.182)
Intermediate Edu			-0.069	-0.091			-0.053	-0.075
			(0.271)	(0.273)			(0.274)	(0.274)
Secondary Edu			-0.128	-0.169			-0.123	-0.153
			(0.213)	(0.214)			(0.211)	(0.212)
Tertiary Edu			0.381	0.332			0.385	0.351
			(0.266)	(0.268)			(0.267)	(0.267)
Constant	4.834***	5.304***	5.327***	5.258***	5.282*	0.565	5.427*	5.374*
	(0.506)	(0.467)	(0.515)	(0.509)	(0.511)	(1.701)	(0.497)	(0.500)
Sample Size	2260	2319	2319	2319	2320	2322	2319	2319
Adj. R²	0.016	0.040	0.044	0.043	0.043	0.047	0.046	0.045

Robust standard errors in parentheses. Levels of statistical significance: * $p<0.10$, **

Table C.29: IV estimator first stage results, connection to piped water and to improved sewerage

	Piped water							
Specification	(1)	(2)	(3)	(4)	(5)	(6)	(7)	(8)
Estimator	OLS	OLS	Probit	Probit	OLS	OLS	Probit	Probit
IV Distance to Centre					-0.00026***	-0.00022***	-0.00025***	-0.00020***
					(0.000)	(0.000)	(0.000)	(0.000)
IV House on Rock	-0.16164***	-0.10562***	-0.16354***	-0.09920***	-0.10239***	-0.06984**	-0.09296***	-0.05227*
	(0.035)	(0.034)	(0.035)	(0.033)	(0.034)	(0.033)	(0.033)	(0.031)
IV Age of House	0.00141***	0.00078***	0.00175***	0.00109***	0.00090***	0.00049***	0.00111***	0.00070***
	(0.000)	(0.000)	(0.000)	(0.000)	(0.000)	(0.000)	(0.000)	(0.000)
Sample Size	2419	2369	2419	2369	2354	2307	2354	2307
Covariates	No	Yes	No	Yes	No	Yes	No	Yes
Adj. R²	0.031	0.157			0.162	0.244		
Pseudo R²			0.026	0.134			0.124	0.205
F	39.480	30.468			152.227	47.598		
Chi²			86.386	438.098			402.396	652.672
Model p-value	0.000***	0.000***	0.000***	0.000***	0.000***	0.000***	0.000***	0.000***

	Improved sewerage							
Specification	(9)	(10)	(11)	(12)	(13)	(14)	(15)	(16)
Estimator	OLS	OLS	Probit	Probit	OLS	OLS	Probit	Probit
IV Distance to Centre					-0.00028***	-0.00024***	-0.00037***	-0.00027***
					(0.000)	(0.000)	(0.000)	(0.000)
IV House on Rock	-0.20633***	-0.15756***	-0.22479***	-0.16258***	-0.14258***	-0.11865***	-0.12721***	-0.11258***
	(0.035)	(0.034)	(0.037)	(0.035)	(0.033)	(0.032)	(0.036)	(0.035)
IV Age of House	0.00103***	0.00054***	0.00104***	0.00056***	0.00046***	0.00020	0.00027*	0.00014
	(0.000)	(0.000)	(0.000)	(0.000)	(0.000)	(0.000)	(0.000)	(0.000)
Sample Size	2419	2370	2419	2370	2354	2308	2354	2308
Covariates	No	Yes	No	Yes	No	Yes	No	Yes
Adj. R²	0.026	0.150			0.189	0.264		
Pseudo R²			0.021	0.123			0.188	0.239
F	33.551	28.895			183.444	52.636		
Chi²			68.441	395.012			596.654	745.484
Model p-value	0.000***	0.000***	0.000***	0.000***	0.000***	0.000***	0.000***	0.000***

Probit coefficients are marginal effects. Note that the small sizes of the coefficients for IV Distance to Centre are rooted in the unit of measure of the variable in meters. An alternative measure in hundred metre increments (*i.e.*, shifting the decimal point by two places) yields coefficient sizes ranging between -0.037 and -0.020, always statistically significant at the one per cent level. Exemplary set of covariates used here comprises: Age HH Head, Gender HH Head, Marital Status HH Head, Disease Awareness, HH Member trained, Asset Index, Dependency Ratio, Water Tank present, TV present, and Primary to Tertiary Education Levels. Robust standard errors in parentheses. Levels of statistical significance: * $p<0.10$, ** $p<0.05$, *** $p<0.01$

C.7   Geography

Figure C.1: Geographic location of survey towns
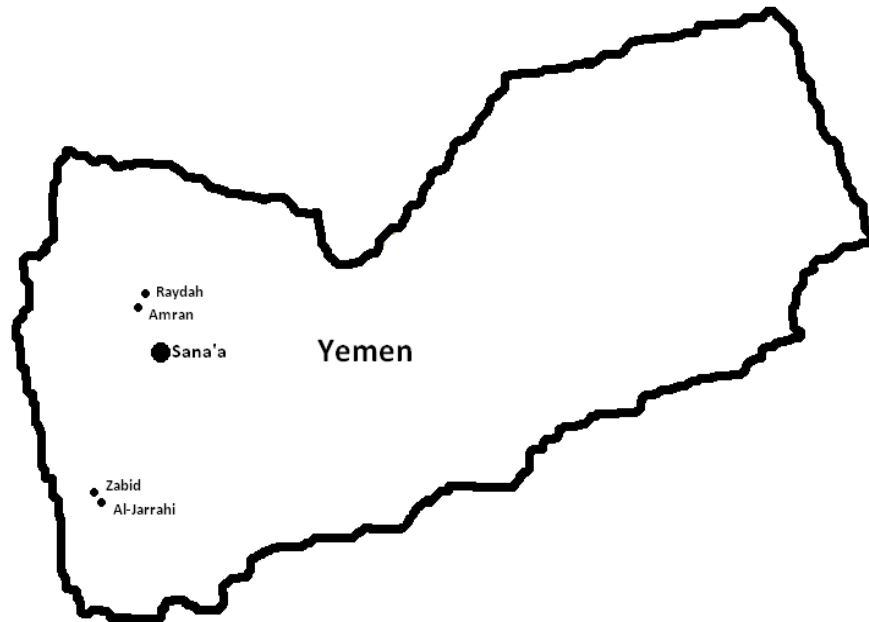
The map (author's drawing) shows the mountainous project (Amran) and control (Raydah) towns northward of the capital city Sana'a as well as those in the western coastal plain (Zabid and Al Jarrahi).

Eidesstattliche Versicherung

Hiermit versichere ich an Eides statt, dass die eingereichte Dissertation *"Battle and Beating, Water and Waste – Micro-Level Impact Evaluation in Developing and Emerging Economies"* selbständig verfasst habe. Anderer als der von mir angegebenen Hilfsmittel und Schriften habe ich mich nicht bedient. Alle wörtlich oder sinngemäß den Schriften anderer Autorinnen und/ oder Autoren entnommenen Stellen habe ich kenntlich gemacht.

Göttingen, den 09.12.2013

Johannes P. Rieckmann

Personal details and educational background

Personal details

___

Name	Johannes Peter Rieckmann
Nationality	German
Date of birth	12 September 1980
Place of birth	Göttingen, Germany
Email	Johannes.Rieckmann@gmail.com

Education in reverse chronology

___

11/2008 – 02/2014   University of Göttingen, Germany
                     Doctoral studies in economics, supervisor Prof. Stephan Klasen, Ph.D.
                     Areas of cumulative dissertation: impact evaluation, development economics, conflict economics, behavioural economics. Dissertation thesis: *Battle and Beating, Water and Waste – Micro-Level Impact Evaluation in Developing and Emerging Economies.*

10/2001 – 03/2007   University of Bremen
                     Diplom-Oeconom in economics and business studies
                     Focus on international economic relations, development economics
                     Final thesis: *Two dynamic export sectors (diamonds, tourism) in Namibia and Botswana. Comparison of development strategies.*

10/2004 – 07/2005   University of Bremen
                     Master of Arts in business studies, international programme
                     Focus on innovative brand management
                     Final thesis: *A market potential analysis for ecological building material – the case of Trendwende.*

10/2003 – 07/2004   Université Paris VIII
                     Erasmus (level: Licence)
                     Economie et gestion

06/2000   Wilhelm Gymnasium Braunschweig
                     University-entrance Diploma
                     Emphases Math, Chemistry, German, Politics